

MUNPIA



BREAKERS 취룡 퓨전 판타지 장편소설

브레이커즈 1

Breakers

- 브레이커즈 -

- Part 4 -

**-Author-
Chwiryong**

[Rainbow Turtle (Wuxiaworld)]

Chapter 150

War Destruction

As he recovered consciousness, there was a series of changes. In-gong opened his eyes slowly as he regained consciousness. The time till In-gong truly woke up was getting shorter.

In-gong blinked. At that moment, a woman appeared in the air and hugged In-gong tightly. A loud voice woke In-gong up,

“Master! You’re awake?!”

In-gong woke up because of her. There was a heavy but comfortable pressure on his chest as In-gong shook his head. When he stared in front of him, he saw a green haired beauty smiling at him.

“Green Wind.”

“That’s right. It is Green Wind. I am not Greenie.”

Green Wind made the antlers on her head smaller than usual and rubbed her cheek against In-gong’s chest. In-gong narrowed his eyes as he felt hungrier than usual.

“Green Wind, how long has it been?”

He asked while stroking her head. Then Green Wind answered as she enjoyed the touch,

“A week. Master was asleep for a week.”

It was longer than he had expected. Somehow, he was hungry despite being full of power.

In-gong closed his eyes for a moment and searched through his memories. The last memory was of his meeting with the demon king. The sins of the gandharva that the

demon king mentioned... Additionally, the Seed of Extreme Nothingness which the demon king had given to him.

‘Somehow, I feel reborn.’

It wasn’t a mere feeling. The balance in his body was fixed, and the original aura heart and Moonlight Core were now strengthened, just like when the dragon heart had absorbed the crystal magic power. Aura and magic power blended together naturally.

‘Was it some type of metamorphosis?’

His overall stats had also risen slightly. Thanks to the Seed of Extreme Nothingness, his body was now optimized.

‘Zephyr and I, we are the only two.’

Zephyr had also received the Seed of Extreme Nothingness from the demon king. Perhaps the reason why this Zephyr was stronger than the one in Knight Saga was because of the Seed of Extreme Nothingness.

‘Extreme Nothingness.’

The sword duke’s name for it was very good, and In-gong could agree with that name. The only word which could express the absolute strength of the demon king was extreme. How did Zephyr make use of the Extreme Nothingness? Furthermore, could In-gong conquer the Extreme Nothingness?

A smile formed on In-gong’s face. If Carack was here, he would say that In-gong was burning with ambition.

It was just Zephyr and In-gong who had received the Seed of Extreme Nothingness. Before In-gong had appeared, Zephyr had been the sole contender in the race to become the demon king’s successor. In-gong had caught up with Zephyr in this area. Far from being fazed about the Extreme Nothingness which was difficult to conquer, Conquest was actually excited.

“Oh, Prince. You woke up?”

A voice interrupted In-gong while he was thinking. It was a face he had wanted to see

as much as Green Wind's.

"Carack."

As In-gong called out his name, Carack smiled and walked over to the bed.

"The sword duke brought Prince back. He said you would sleep for a week in the aftermath of the demon king's teachings, but you really did wake up after a week."

As always, it was Carack who explained the situation to In-gong. Before In-gong carried on with the conversation, In-gong touched his belly, and a rumbling sound was heard from the area.

"Carack, let's eat first. I am hungry."

After all, he had been starving for a week.

"It hasn't been prepared. Wait a bit, and I'll get it for you."

Carack answered reliably and left the room. Regardless of what happened around her, Green Wind just closed her eyes and leaned her head on In-gong's chest. He took a short nap.

"6th Princess and 8th Princess came to visit everyday."

Green Wind released In-gong as he sat up with a tray of food in front of him. After hearing that Felicia and Caitlin came everyday, In-gong felt grateful and satisfied. He was sorry that he worried them, but it was good to feel treasured.

In-gong tore a piece of warm bread and asked,

"Has anything big happened in the last week?"

"There was nothing big. If you want information, the boss will come soon."

Carack said while looking at the door, and Nayatra entered the room with perfect timing.

“Your Highness.”

She bowed gracefully, as always, and looked at the food in front of In-gong before she started speaking,

“While Your Highness was unconscious, I gathered information about the situations of the other royal children.”

Yes, Nayatra was truly competent.

In-gong nodded, and Nayatra resumed speaking with a small smile. This was the simple summary of what she said:

In the north where 1st Prince Baikal and 2nd Prince Zephyr were located, there was tension after a big battle. The part of the Northern Limit Line, where Baikal was located, was in fact a highly disputed area where small battles occurred frequently.

Zephyr was located on the northern front, but it was an area with fewer battles. Zephyr, who had finished a big fight with great victory, wasn't satisfied with defense. Instead, he advanced to the north, across the line, and attacked.

Just like Silvan, Chris had gone to the north-east region and experienced a number of battles, but the frequency was relatively low. Finally, Anastasia and Victor had gone west, and it was peaceful there. Unlike the eastern barbarians, the barbarians beyond the Western Limit Line were waiting quietly.

‘They will be impatient.’

If nothing happened, they wouldn't be able to build up merits. Anastasia was seriously aiming for the throne of the demon king, so she wouldn't be satisfied with peace.

“Thank you, that was helpful.”

The information was really helpful, so those weren't just empty words. Nayatra had been able to gather such detailed information on this matter that he felt sorry towards Carack. However, Nayatra was the best in the field of information.

“Thank you. I am glad that you are satisfied.”

Nayatra replied with a wide smile, completely different from her old nickname of ice princess. In-gong felt better and asked Nayatra,

“Uh, Nayatra. Is that a whip?”

A rolled up leather whip was hanging from Nayatra’s waist. Nayatra nodded quickly at In-gong’s question and replied,

“Yes, in fact, I specialize in whipping.”

Her eyes were shining like she was expecting something. In-gong thought about what to do with this deep-rooted misunderstanding and decided to put it aside. Looking at In-gong’s life, it was natural the misunderstandings would remain.

‘As long as it doesn’t get deeper.’

Nayatra’s gaze was hot as she stared at In-gong, and Carack just chuckled.

“So. Prince, what are you going to do today?”

There were three choices for In-gong.

One, go with Felicia to the library.

Two, train with Caitlin.

Three, walk around alone.

In the cases of the first two choices, they both had distinct purposes.

If he met Felicia, he could investigate the Four Knights of the Apocalypse as well as ask her about 3rd Queen Sylvia. Additionally, he had to talk to Sylvia about Silvan’s fairy. Sylvia had said she would prepare some compensation next time, but In-gong had rescued Felicia and Sylvia because he had wanted to. However, he didn’t intend to refuse any compensation.

The meeting with Caitlin also included the meeting with 4th Queen Elaine. He didn’t have to converse with her like he had to with Sylvia, but she still needed to reward him

for killing Gerard. No matter which of the two he chose, it would be a joyful meeting with a beautiful girl.

However, after some deliberation, In-gong chose the third option.

“A whole week has passed.”

It had been more than a week since he arrived at the Demon King’s Palace. Looking back at the past, it was his longest stay. He didn’t know what would happen again, so he had to do the Demon King’s Palace tour when there was still time.

“Well, Prince’s senses are good, so I will stay by your side.”

Instead of asking why, In-gong started moving immediately. He sent a letter to Felicia and Caitlin stating he had woken up safely, then he left his mansion with Carack.

“Now, let’s get started.”

It was an opportunity to use his knowledge from Knight Saga. In-gong hurried as he thought this. In order to complete his planned tour in one day, fast progress was essential.

This was a rough summary:

After arriving at an old fountain on the outskirts of the town in the Demon King’s Palace, In-gong threw in a gold coin he had prepared in advance. Then a translucent blue soul appeared over the fountain.

The old man parted his lips slowly,

“You, according to the guidance of good luck...”

“Flitcher.”

In-gong said briefly and the soul became confused. In-gong continued without caring,

“The name of the man who drove you to your death is Flitcher. And this is a bottle that contains his soul after he died.”

In-gong pulled out a bottle from the inventory, and the soul of the old man blinked in shock.

“H-how? I never said...”

However, once again, In-gong didn't listen. He threw the bottle on the floor and covered it with holy water he had prepared in advance. Then with a short scream, Fletcher's soul, which was in the bottle, disappeared.

“Now, I have resolved your grudge. Aren't you thankful? So quickly give me compensation.”

The old man, who had been staring at the bottle blankly, woke up at In-gong's words. He looked at In-gong with a face full of chagrin before disappearing. Carack, who had seen this sight several times, clicked his tongue and said,

“You are cruel.”

“There is no time.”

In-gong recovered the magic necklace left behind in the place where the soul had disappeared and moved to the next area immediately.

After that, In-gong travelled all over the palace: opening up secret bookcases; destroying a statue which moved in the daytime; and opening up a treasure storehouse in a basement.

Considering the problem of time and the butterfly effect, In-gong skipped character related quests and only proceeded with the quests associated with specific places. In fact, there were some quests which weren't so rewarding, but In-gong did them all. It was better than no compensation at all, and it would be a shame if Zephyr obtained them.

After a long tour, it was sunset. In-gong couldn't help but feel satisfied as he looked at his inventory. He had gained many quest items thanks to his knowledge of Knight Saga.

“There are still quite a lot left.”

The area he roamed today was just inside the Demon King's Palace. However, there

were still facilities, such as the library, remaining, so there were still a few pleasures left.

“Your stamina is good. Isn’t it hard?”

It was a tiring day wandering around the Demon King’s Palace. Carack tapped on his legs like he was in pain, and In-gong laughed brightly. It was because his stats were ridiculously high compared to his level.

‘I should focus more on Carack’s growth. His persistence should increase.’

In-gong modified Carack’s nurturing plan instantly and used recovery magic before heading back to the mansion.

As expected, there were guests waiting at In-gong’s mansion.

“Shutra is too much.”

“That’s right, too much.”

“I guess he really is like the wind.”

Caitlin, Felicia and Silvan spoke in turn.

Upon receiving news that In-gong had woken up, the three people visited the mansion and had to wait hours for In-gong to return.

“Sorry.”

Caitlin swelled up at In-gong’s apology, while In-gong’s eyes narrowed. Despite the fairy still not being stabilized, Silvan was the only relatively calm one in the room. In-gong sat down and started comforting Caitlin and Felicia. Flora came in with timely refreshments.

“Did you receive a new teaching from the sword duke?”

Felicia asked with an anxious face.

A week ago, the sword duke had instructed Carack to hide In-gong’s encounter with

the demon king. There had already been an uproar just from the demon king calling his name at the court gathering.

In-gong had been informed by Carack beforehand and nodded silently.

“Yes, you don’t have to worry about it. I am much healthier than I was a week ago.”

Of course, he didn’t intend to hide the meeting from Felicia and Caitlin, but there was no need to talk about it now. That talk was too complicated. Caitlin smiled at In-gong’s words and said,

“Shutra is correct. His aura has a very stable feel.”

There was no sense of incongruity with the dragon heart now.

“Umm, what does Silvan think?”

Felicia was pretty ignorant about aura, so she wanted to check with Silvan. Silvan looked at In-gong with moist eyes and said,

“I’m just envious.”

In-gong had received the teachings of the sword duke not once but twice. Silvan’s appearance was quite pitiful, but thankfully, the topic was changed.

“Shutra, I have something to say.”

Caitlin glanced at Felicia before talking.

“In a few days, I will leave for the north-east to help Chris. Felicia unni and Silvan oppa will also leave the Demon King’s Palace.”

“Both of you are going to help Chris hyung?”

Felicia shook her head at In-gong’s question.

“No, we have decided to go home with Omamama. We will pick up more crew members for the Black Flame Dragon and check Silvan’s condition.”

He was stable thanks to In-gong, but they couldn't rest assured just yet.

"You don't have to worry. I am healthy."

Silvan laughed and spread his arms wide open. Felicia hit Silvan's shoulder and while she watched Caitlin, Felicia opened her mouth,

"So, it makes sense..."

Felicia's gaze headed back to In-gong. Then she asked with a warm smile,

"Shutra, do you want to come with us to the home of the dark elves? Haven't you visited the lycanthropes? So, you should also visit the home of the dark elves to balance it out."

"Um, I agree."

Silvan supported her from the side. Then Caitlin shouted,

"Unni is mean! We decided to say it together."

"Yes, so say it now."

Felicia's eyes widened as she turned away from Caitlin's gaze. Caitlin puffed up her cheeks before turning to In-gong.

"Shutra, do you want to go with me to help Chris oppa? Chris oppa has been alone for so long. Oppa will want to see Shutra."

In-gong remembered Chris' face for a moment. It was likely that he wanted to see Caitlin more than In-gong.

'Anyway, they both want me to go with them.'

It was embarrassing but also a very pleasant situation.

'Master, your smile is evil.'

Green Wind muttered in his ear. In-gong tried to think seriously as he fixed his

expression. However, his worries didn't last long. Flora entered the room again and handed him a letter.

“Indeed, Prince's senses is correct.”

He could see that it was a letter from the Merits Department. Instead of replying to Carack, In-gong opened the envelope and read the letter. As expected, it was about the new mission.

‘9th Prince Shutra, depart from the Demon King's Palace at noon in four days to support the 3rd Prince Victor Nokrion and 4th Princess Anastasia Nokrion.’

Anastasia Nokrion...

The daughter of the demon king, who was the leader of one of three factions with Baikal and Zephyr.

It was time to face her.

“Then I will go with Shutra.”

Chapter 151

War Destruction #2

In-gong showed the order to Felicia, Silvan and Caitlin. Felicia narrowed her eyes and said,

“Why Anastasia unni?”

It would have been nice if he was sent as support for Chris or even for Baikal. Even though it was better than going to support Zephyr, it still wasn't an easy task for In-gong.

However, this had been decided by the Merits Department. Unless there was a reasonable justification, he couldn't refuse the mission just because their factions were different.

‘Of course, that doesn't mean there is no method to do it.’

He could give up the mission by using illness as an excuse. However, that was merely a workaround. It was obvious it would have an adverse effect on the achievements he had accumulated.

‘It is time to face her.’

He couldn't avoid his other siblings forever just because they were in different factions. Moreover, unlike Zephyr, In-gong had no intention of murdering the other children of the demon king. If it was possible, he wanted to form a friendly relationship with Baikal or Anastasia.

‘It seems quite difficult.’

Although Baikal was unknown, Anastasia was hard to deal with. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that her desire to become the demon king was the greatest among all his children.

What would happen if Anastasia became the demon king? Although she was called the female Zephyr among the Knight Saga fandom, she wouldn't cause the Day of Massacre like Zephyr would.

'But... she might carry out a political purge.'

In any case, it was clear she was better than Zephyr. At Baikal's tea party, she hadn't expressed any direct hostility to her other siblings. Moreover, it might be In-gong's own thoughts, but Anastasia seemed quite favourable to Baikal. Not only were Anastasia's and Baikal's factions different, but they were also strong contenders in the fight against the demon king.

In-gong recalled Anastasia's face as he thought about something else. Why was he being sent to support Anastasia? According to the information gathered by Nayatra, Anastasia didn't require support. The western area, where she was staying, was peaceful.

There were two possibilities he could think of:

Either the situation had changed in the past few days, or there were some hidden intentions regarding the mission.

Just like Evian which In-gong had been in charge of, the information from the west wasn't delivered to the Demon King's Palace in real time. Even if Nayatra had a gift with information, there was a limit to what could be gathered after just entering the Demon King's Palace. Perhaps the western situation which had been reported to In-gong today was based on information from a few days ago, while the Merits Department had more updated information.

'If the situation hasn't changed, is someone behind this?'

However, who would do this?

Unlike the previous mission on the Enger Plains, this mission wasn't one from the demon king. The duties assigned to each child of the demon king were established with fairly high standards by the Merits Department. Therefore, it was difficult for someone to manipulate the missions.

Of course, a captain was capable of doing it if they were determined. However, it was

easy to be discovered, and the risk was too great. There was also no reason for the captains to manipulate this mission.

‘Richard and Yecaderina are capable of doing so.’

However, there was no motivation for either of them to do so. Richard had used the march toward Evian to try and test In-gong’s skills, but he had gone quiet after that. Moreover, he was now on the northern frontier, not at the Demon King’s Palace.

‘Although he is walking on a tightrope, he isn’t the type to do this.’

Similarly, the succubus captain, Yecaderina, was too smart for something like this.

Based on the laws of elimination, In-gong presumed the situation in the west had changed. Or maybe In-gong was just making it more complicated than it was.

Unlike the other children of the demon king, ‘Shutra’ had completed his first task for the Merits Department at 14 years old. The number of missions he had completed were inevitably fewer than the other demon king’s children.

The Merits Department treated the children of the demon king as fairly as possible, ignoring the relationship between factions. It was possible the mission to support Anastasia was a belated mission.

While In-gong was thinking about this alone, Felicia, Caitlin and Silvan had different thoughts. Among the three, Felicia was the first one to open her mouth,

“Then I will go with Shutra.”

Felicia spoke suddenly. She shrugged and said,

“You are going to see Anastasia unni, not some other person. Didn’t everybody see it at Baikal’s tea party? I can’t send Shutra alone.”

Felicia had fended off Anastasia’s remarks during Baikal’s tea party. The two didn’t have a bad relationship, but Felicia alone had blocked all of Anastasia’s strikes toward In-gong.

“Moreover, there is the issue of reinforcements. The dark elves and lycanthropes can’t

send reinforcements without Caitlin or me being there.”

Her words were irrefutable. It was controversial for reinforcements to be sent to those who weren't of their own blood. There was no objection to this statement.

Silvan, who was supposed to return home with Felicia just a few moments ago, had an expression of regret on his face, but he nodded in agreement.

In response to the dark elf siblings, Caitlin licked her lips in distress, but in the end, she gave a long sigh.

“I will go to help Chris oppa as planned. Anastasia unni and Victor oppa are in the west, and Felicia unni will follow. There isn't any apparent danger, and... I feel like I have left Chris oppa alone for too long. So, I want to see Oppa.”

Despite the different factions, the siblings would still fight together, and Caitlin truly had a lot of affection for Chris. Caitlin's words brought warmth to everyone's faces. Among them, Silvan was especially impressed as he stared at Caitlin with moist eyes.

“I'm envious of Chris. He has a praiseworthy sister.”

Silvan stroked Caitlin's head, unable to hide the envy in his voice. Caitlin turned bright red at Silvan's remark and said,

“Well, aren't I also Silvan oppa's sister?”

“Heok.”

Silvan grabbed his chest like he had been struck. It was obvious his heart had received a hit.

“I-I see. You are already my sister. B-but Felicia...!”

Silvan looked at Felicia with a frown, and Felicia hit Silvan on the head with her fan. She spoke with a prim expression,

“It isn't about that, and Silvan knows this perfectly well.”

Felicia wasn't without any affection toward Silvan. She had wanted to go home to the

territory of the dark elves due to Silvan's fairy.

However, this had a higher priority. Silvan smiled like he understood and said,

"Yes, I won't insist in this situation. Moreover, I am also Shutra's knight. I can't be too greedy. As soon as the maintenance of the Black Flame Dragon is over, I will fly to the west.

Silvan spoke in a simple manner while staring at In-gong with a serious expression. It was quite a burdensome sight, so In-gong quickly turned his gaze toward Caitlin, who smiled.

"Shutra, let me know if you ever need my help. Understand?"

"Noona as well. Please contact me if you ever need me. I will go running towards your location."

"Faster than the wind?"

"Eung."

The atmosphere was a bit embarrassing, but In-gong agreed. As In-gong and Caitlin smiled at each other, Felicia opened her fan with a loud sound and caught everyone's attention.

"Anyway, the time we have is quite short. Maybe we should move after the reinforcements join, just like at Evian."

They still had three days to spare, but today was almost over. They could save time by sending the reinforcements from Evian to the west, but Alita was the leader of the reinforcements, and she was currently in Karamis with the Black Flame Dragon. It was unreasonable to suddenly call her to the west.

It was at that moment that a new voice was heard from the entrance of the room.

"Well, it was noisy, so I thought everybody would be gathered."

"Amita?"

Caitlin cried out reflexively. Indeed, Amita and Daphne were standing at the entrance to the room.

As all their eyes gathered on Amita, Amita laughed and then shouted with both arms wide open.

“This Amita has finished!”

Amita jumped down and ran toward the sofa in a good mood. Daphne put down a box in front of In-gong.

“Now, the improved version of Night Watch.”

Inside the box, there was a dark blue cloak. Amita spoke while their tail tapped on the sofa.

“The flying ability and defense capabilities have been strengthened, and the daily usage of Blink has increased from three to five times. How about it?”

“As expected from Amita.”

It was just basic specs work, but this was good too. Amita felt better after In-gong’s appropriate reaction and said,

“I also made the armour for the orc.”

“Oh, really?”

Carack asked with wide eyes. He hadn’t expected anything because his order was last in the sequence.

Amita smiled and replied,

“I tried to postpone it until the last, but I ended up finishing it. Come to the workshop later. I prepared something that fits a heavy but ignorant guy very well.”

“I understand, thank you.”

Carack smiled brightly at Daphne, who also smiled back. Maybe it was because of her

that Carack's order had been pulled forward.

"So, what were you talking about?"

Amita asked while flopping down on the sofa, and In-gong showed them the command from the Merits Department.

"A new mission has been received. This time I will go to the west. Do you know Curtis?"

"Uhh, west... is that Curtis? I dislike it because there is a lot of rain."

Amita muttered with an upset face. Then In-gong smiled and asked,

"Do you want to follow me?"

"It isn't following but being dragged along! Don't talk like that while smiling!"

Amita stood up and banged their tail on the sofa. In-gong told Amita,

"It is okay. This time, please wait at the Demon King's Palace."

"What? Really?"

"Yes, it is fine."

This was just a support mission. Whether he liked it or not, he was highly likely to encounter Anastasia several times, and In-gong didn't want her to know about Amita's existence.

'I have to leave Nayatra behind as well.'

Her interrogation abilities were useful, but there was a task he wanted her to prioritize. Nayatra would lay down the foundations of the information organization as well as investigate the gandharva's sins.

Daphne was in charge of Amita, so she would be left behind as well. This time, only Carack and Karma would go.

While Amita was expressing their happiness about not having to follow In-gong, In-

gong tried to recall the western area of the Demon World from Knight Saga. The first things which came to mind were the giants.

They were a tough warrior species with a height of approximately eight meters. They were called the breakwater in the western part of the Demon World because they blocked the barbarians beyond the Western Limit Line.

After a bit of discussion about the future schedule, the party separated. As Felicia said, the time constraints were tight, so they had to hurry.

Four days later, at noon, Silvan and Caitlin had already left, while In-gong and Felicia were standing in front of the transportation formation. As they had planned originally, Amita, Daphne and Nayatra were left at the palace, so the only ones with Felicia and In-gong were Carack, Karma and Delia.

After saying goodbye to Nayatra and Daphne at the transportation formation, Carack took a deep breath and said,

“We should be prepared for an event.”

“Huh? Didn’t the additional information gathered from Nayatra say that it isn’t serious?”

During the past few days, In-gong hadn’t simply been waiting for the departure. Together with Felicia, he had conducted an investigation into the Four Knights of the Apocalypse, while Nayatra had collected as much information as possible about the west.

The west was currently quiet. Although there were a few small battles near the Western Limit Line, there wasn’t a case of the barbarians crossing over like in Evian.

“But now Prince is going there.”

“Yes. I’m going.”

Carack replied, and In-gong nodded like he was convinced. Felicia frowned from where she was standing beside the two men.

“Hey, can’t we just follow the flow for now?”

Instead of answering, In-gong and Carack looked at each other and laughed.

Green Wind whispered in In-gong's ears,

'Master, if the orc is correct, does that mean the 4th Princess in a pitiful situation right now?'

"We'll see?"

Indeed, what would happen?

In-gong took a deep breath and straightened his posture.

The transportation formation was activated.

Chapter 152

War Destruction #3

“9th Prince is headed to Curtis. He is going there to support the 3rd Prince and 4th Princess.”

Henry completed his short oral report regarding the new information which had just arrived from the Demon King's Palace.

Instead of reaching for the report, Richard, the draconian captain, just simply stared at his nephew's—at Henry's face. Henry was hiding it with a solemn expression, but there was a deep feeling of relief and pleasure.

The plan to measure the 9th Prince's strength using Jiks had failed. Henry was delighted about this fact, while Richard felt somewhat confused.

It was due to the fact that the 9th Prince had won against Jiks.

‘I still can't imagine it.’

He didn't know how the 9th Prince had won against Jiks. Had the 8th Princess helped him or had she simply watched from behind?

Richard didn't consider the possibility that Jiks wouldn't have managed to escape after losing. He could find out information from Jiks' scattered subordinates, but that was too cumbersome and time-consuming. Apart from Jiks, Richard's arm had no reach in Evian.

Richard was even more puzzled about the 9th Prince's consequent successes.

He had taken all the bases with a stormy approach and rescued the senior general, Vandal. That alone was amazing, but the 9th Prince had even led the troops directly into a massive fight against the barbarian king and his army.

It was already at a standard of being an active leader. He could even believe that ‘9th

Prince' had been written mistakenly in the report, instead of '1st Prince' or '2nd Prince'.

The 9th Prince's growth went against common sense. Although he had played a prominent role at Enger Plains, there was a huge difference between what he had done at Enger Plains and what he had done at Evian.

How had he become stronger so suddenly?

When one considered the situation with common sense, this was simply impossible. The 2nd Prince had been born with a monstrous talent, but even he wasn't at this level. In just half a year, an incompetent prince had been reborn as an advanced general.

'He was hiding his skills.'

Richard could only think of that. However, even so, this wasn't a perfect answer.

'Too strong.'

Right now, the 9th Prince was only 14 or 15 years old. Compared to his age, he was excessively strong. Even when it was taken into account that the report had been inflated, the 9th Prince was at least at the level of an intermediate general.

'There is a reason why the sword duke has shown interest in him.'

The 9th Prince's activities weren't things he could do simply because he was strong. It was clear he had considerable talent in military matters as well.

Many people thought the 9th Prince was borrowing the power of the 6th and 8th Princesses, but Richard didn't think so. The 6th and 8th Princesses didn't have such talent. Their talents stood out in their respective fields, but they weren't all-rounders. In fact, until now, the two people hadn't been involved in such activities.

There was the possibility that 9th Prince's aide had this power, but that was a useless story. The 9th Prince's aide was an orc—a soldier he had met on his first mission outside. Given the average intellect of the orcs, the possibility that the 9th Prince's aide had military talent was close to zero.

The 9th Prince's achievements were completely due to the 9th Prince's power. Not

only did the 9th Prince have considerable individual abilities, he had strong military capabilities as well.

It was huge. The 9th Prince had suddenly become prominent in a very short amount of time. There wasn't even a chance to step on that growing bud. By the time Richard had realized it, the 9th Prince had already obtained the power to turn the three factions into four.

All the children who weren't interested in the position of the demon king were in his faction. The most surprising thing was the support behind the 9th Prince. Why did the 3rd and 4th Queens give their support to the 9th Prince instead of their own children?

Richard became more stimulated the more he thought about it.

'Amazing, amazing.'

Richard was interested in the 9th Prince and really wanted to observe him.

Richard's gaze glided over the short sentences in the report. Then he stared at Henry, his nephew who had a strong loyalty toward the demon king, and thought carefully before opening his mouth.

"Captain, if we observe Curtis, then we will be able to gauge 9th Prince's ability."

Everything at Evian had been too sudden. Moreover, Jiks had been smashed at the beginning, so there was no way for them to observe the 9th Prince. However, this time was different. Richard could send some people to keep a watch on the 9th Prince.

Therefore, Henry's words were quite valid. He didn't need to use radical measures like a surprise attack to explore the 9th Prince's capabilities.

However, Richard shook his head slowly.

"Well, I wonder if that will happen."

"Captain?"

"4th Princess is responsible for Curtis. It is doubtful she will give any opportunities to 9th Prince."

This situation was different from what had happened at Enger Plains and Evian. The 9th Prince was being dispatched as support for the 4th Princess, so there was a limit to how big of a role he could play.

Henry's eyes widened as he realized this. Rather than scolding his honest nephew, Richard turned his gaze toward the map of the Demon World on his desk.

On the eastern front where Evian was located, there was a major uproar due to the barbarian king. How about the western front? Would something also happen in Curtis?

Richard's gaze moved further on the map to beyond the Western Limit Line.

As always, the transportation was successful. In-gong opened his eyes at Curtis' transportation formation and saw a guide soldier standing before them.

After standing for a moment to ease through the transition, the guide soldier came up to In-gong and Felicia and bowed.

"It is a pleasure to meet 9th Prince and 6th Princess."

The guide soldier was a black-haired young man, who was very handsome and tall. Both of his eyes were moist, which could confuse people. He wasn't a local soldier but an incubus, who was one of Anastasia's subordinates.

"Your Highnesses, I am Carlos, and I will guide you around Curtis."

'He is a watchdog.'

The reason why an incubus, and not a local soldier, was sent was obvious. Felicia narrowed her eyes and asked Carlos,

"Where is Unni right now?"

"There are some suspicious movements near the limit line, so she is going to the front."

According to the additional information gathered from the Demon King's Palace, there had already been several small encounters at the Western Limit Line. There were no full-scale engagements, but both sides scouted each other's power repeatedly.

"Then are we going to the front?"

Carlos frowned slightly at Carack's question. He acted restrained in front of In-gong and Felicia, but he seemed displeased. He went on to ignore Carack, who was an orc.

'You shouldn't ignore the orc.'

While In-gong was thinking this, Carlos corrected his expression and told In-gong and Felicia in a polite tone,

"4th Princess has specifically assigned a defenseless area to 9th Prince and 6th Princess. I will take you there."

At the special request, In-gong and Felicia looked at each other. The two of them shared the same thoughts.

"As expected, it is a bad area. Are we going to be kept in the rear?"

Just like Evian, Curtis wasn't the name of a city but the name for the entire western front.

The transportation formation connected to the Demon King's Palace was located to the east end of Curtis. Currently, Anastasia and Victor had arrived earlier and were able to move to the northwest using the transportation formations.

However, In-gong's party was now moving in a carriage toward the southwest, rather than the northwest. It was still the west, but the south-west area wasn't connected to the Western Limit Line. In other words, it was a quiet area with a low chance of an enemy attacking.

This was because Anastasia hadn't accomplished any great merits since being sent to Curtis. Now that In-gong had appeared, it was inevitable that Anastasia would feel displeased. It was natural for her to put In-gong in the rear, so that he couldn't build up any merits.

From Enger Plains to Evian, In-gong had always been in charge. However, this time, he was just a helper. It was Anastasia's role to oversee the royal children dispatched to Curtis, so she had the choice of whether or not to ask In-gong for help.

"Well, I guess it is hard to go against Anastasia in this."

Felicia said with a frown. Carack smiled from opposite her and said,

"But if you're going to be safe, the rear doesn't seem that bad. Especially when looking at Prince's state right now."

Carack said, and all eyes in the carriage turned toward In-gong.

In-gong was fitting a bracelet onto Felicia's wrist. As one of the items collected during his tour of the Demon King's Palace, it was a one time charm to defend against physical attacks.

"Now, the last one."

Next to the blue bracelet was a red bracelet. To be exact, it was the 12th magic item. In addition to Felicia's arms, several magic items of various colours were hanging around her neck, from her ears, waist and so on. All of them had belonged to In-gong.

"Prince, isn't this a little too much? There should be a harmony, harmony."

Not only were there too many, the colours didn't match each other. It was a natural result of equipping the magic items randomly.

"Uhh, is that so?"

In-gong shrugged as he looked at Felicia. She was still pretty, but that was because Felicia was so beautiful that her beauty outshone everything else.

There were two different coloured necklaces and six different coloured bracelets on both of her arms. Additionally, she wore earrings, ankle bracelets and other accessories which created a bizarre image. To be honest, Felicia's beauty wasn't enough to cover everything.

As In-gong stared at Felicia with narrow eyes, Delia said with a smile,

“It shows how much 9th Prince values 6th Princess.”

This was because the accessories were all defensive magic items. After the fight against the Famine Knight, In-gong was interested in Felicia’s defense.

Carack nodded and said,

“Delia, you should tell Prince bluntly.”

In-gong looked like he didn’t understand. Delia hesitated a bit before smiling awkwardly.

“For Her Highness’ reputation, it is a little...”

It was obvious that she would be called a fashion terrorist. Felicia laughed. So far, she had been standing still like a doll, but she spoke at this moment,

“Well, I am a little unbalanced. Still, Shutra prepared these for me, so shouldn’t I wear them?”

Her voice and eyes weren’t lifeless. She was looking at In-gong with a touched expression, like she was about to say Caitlin’s ‘amazing’.

Carack looked at her appearance and shook his head.

“If Prince Silvan were here, he would be wailing.”

Silvan would be filled with envy, then Felicia would hit him on the head with a fan.

In-gong laughed and scratched his jaw.

“Uhh, I guess I should make some adjustments. I think it is a good idea to commission Amita to modify it.”

“Will Amita do it?”

Felicia asked In-gong with a gentle smile.

“Their tail will pound on the floor. They will grunt but wouldn’t they agree in the end?”

In-gong’s gaze turned back to Felicia, and Carack interrupted again.

“Prince, if Prince asks, then even Princess will agree. You are correct.”

It was like that. Felicia blushed and refuted,

“I-it isn’t like that. Don’t you think, Delia?”

“Uh, um, yes. That’s right. If Princess says so, it is the case.”

“Delia!”

Delia’s tone was inconsistent with her words. In-gong smiled as he saw the grouchy Felicia and said,

“Anyway, I’ll ask Amita.”

“Um, I feel like that raccoon is somewhat pitiful.”

“It’s okay, I think they are adapting to it these days. There isn’t as much resistance as there used to be.”

Animals were creatures of adaptation, and a raccoon was like that as well.

Unlike Evian, which was a wasteland, Curtis was a land of rain and greenery. After studying the scenery outside the window for a while, Felicia asked In-gong,

“It will be two days until the reinforcements arrive... Until then, we have no strength, so we just need to stay in the rear. Shutra, do you know anything about the place we’re going to?”

Felicia had wandered all over the Demon World, but this was her first visit to Curtis. Moreover, the place where the party was headed was the fringe of Curtis.

It was the same for In-gong. However, In-gong had intelligence from Knight Saga. To the southwest of Curtis was the land of giants with a huge forest. So, there was a reason why In-gong could remain cheerful despite being sent to the rear.

“It is a fairly interesting place.”

As he stared out the window, In-gong searched through his memories. The surrounding landscape was changing bit by bit.

Chapter 153

War Destruction #4

In-gong's party travelled in the carriage for two days. The first night was spent in a small town, but the second night, they had to camp. It was because there were less people the further south-west they went.

As Amita said, Curtis had a lot of rain. In summer, it was common for it to be raining for several days and nights. Fortunately, it was now winter. Unlike in summer, this rain was currently just a light shower.

On the afternoon of the third day, the scenery outside the carriage changed drastically. The same thick foliage was everywhere, but there was an obvious difference in size.

The grass had grown. The grass, which had been ankle height on the roadside, had now grown to their waist. Even though the forest was far away, it felt considerably closer because the trees were so big.

As Carack rubbed his eyes with surprise, In-gong looked joyfully at the mini-map. Some people had come out to meet them.

"It is nice to meet you! I am Kappa, the daughter of the chief of the Gullam tribe! This is the best hunter in our tribe, Uncle Galang."

The voice of a youthful girl came from high above them. The party in the carriage raised their heads toward the sky and saw a face approximately five meters above them. This was despite the fact that she was leaning on her knees, and half her upper body was bowed.

The red-haired girl, who wore comfortable clothes made of animal skin, was a giant. She looked like a teenager, but she was almost eight meters tall. However, there was a real giant standing behind the girl.

"It is a pleasure to see the royal family."

The voice came from a height of 10 meters. It belonged to a muscular man dressed in animal skin, just like the girl. As his small black eyes stared down at them, he appeared taciturn.

Carack continued to blink in shock. It was because he couldn't figure out how many cows had been killed to make the clothes these female and male giants were wearing. There would need to have been at least a few dozen.

The female, Kappa, gazed at In-gong and Felicia with sharp green eyes. Her eyes were so big, it was like looking in a mirror.

“Are you the prince and princess?”

Her eyes and voice were full of longing. The girl was unaware of it, but her face was too close to them. She would be considered rude by any other royalty, but In-gong and Felicia weren't that formal. They were used to Carack's impudence, so they simply smiled and nodded.

Kappa smiled brightly, then she bit her lip and asked,

“Can I take both of you on my shoulders?”

“Please.”

Felicia replied, and Kappa brought In-gong and Felicia to her shoulders. The gigantic hand reaching for them from above caused instinctive horror, but In-gong and Felicia didn't scream. Rather, they admired the scenery which could be seen from Kappa's shoulders.

Unlike the cyclops and mountain giants who were classified as monsters, rather than humans, the giants living in this forest were simply big humans. They were almost exactly the same as humans, except for being six times larger.

Kappa smiled shyly after putting In-gong and Felicia on her shoulders, feeling a sudden sense of bashfulness about her shoulders. It seemed like she was worrying about what to say.

Apart from Kappa's anxious thoughts, a matter of more importance was that she was eight meters tall, so her stride was huge. She walked at a speed which would be

difficult to follow while in the carriage.

Carack suppressed his wish to ride on the shoulders and looked around. Without realizing it, he was soon convinced.

Kappa and Galang weren't the only big ones—everything around them was big. The change was sudden, so the surrounding area felt smaller.

From his spot on Kappa's shoulder, In-gong was just as convinced as Carack. Despite seeing it in Knight Saga, he now understood it instinctively.

'It is because they are living here.'

Could the giants live if they were thrown into a normal environment?

It would be hard. As Carack had thought, making their clothes would be a daunting task. They were six times the height of normal humans, and the amount of food required to fill their stomachs couldn't be compared to that of ordinary humans.

Therefore, the surrounding environment was great in size as well. Otherwise, it would be difficult for the giants to increase their population.

In-gong was as excited as Kappa. He was really excited to see the scenery of the giants which he had liked in Knight Saga.

The trees in the forest were three to four times larger than common trees. Additionally, although the difference was smaller in comparison to the contrast between giants and humans, there was no way to be accurate about this in the first place.

They soon arrived at the village, where there were dozens of houses made of wood and clay. All of them were single story buildings, possibly due to a weight problem or something else.

'I will get to see it soon.'

In-gong calmed himself down. When he heard he was going to the land of the giants, he couldn't help smiling at the thought of the sight he would soon see.

Then one hour later, after greeting the Gullam clan's chief, In-gong climbed to the top of the table. There was also a small table for normal-sized species, but In-gong wanted to climb onto the giant's table. The reason for this was simple.

"Big."

The food was great and immensely large. He felt happy just looking at the cake which was six times bigger than normal.

Carack stared at the chicken leg which was as big as his body and shared In-gong's happiness as well. The rest of the party couldn't stop smiling either.

"Master, it is amazing."

Green Wind became solid and said to In-gong. In-gong nodded vigorously.

"That's right. It's amazing!"

Why was Caitlin in this place? While In-gong was thinking that, Green Wind looked at Felicia and grinned widely at her.

"Princess should say it as well. Master will like it."

Felicia blinked at the sudden proposal, but she noticed In-gong looking and opened her mouth,

"A-amazing?"

It was far from Caitlin's sunny expression, but her red cheeks made it cute.

However, Green Wind shook her head objectively.

"It isn't similar. Isn't that right, Master?"

Green Wind turned toward In-gong and asked. He had no idea what she was doing, but he couldn't help smiling.

"No, it's similar. It really is similar."

At In-gong's answer, Felicia quickly covered her face with her fan, while Green Wind glared at him.

Carack just laughed and laughed. Delia had to pinch her thighs several times to keep from laughing, and Karma was in a similar situation.

Time passed by, and it was now time to go to bed. So, In-gong got up from the table. There were ordinary houses for other species, so it wasn't inconvenient to use it. He wanted to experience the life of the giants, but it couldn't be helped.

After chatting to Carack for a while, Felicia appeared, dressed in a nightgown. Her cheeks were red from her bath, and her hair was damp. In-gong looked at the terribly exhausted expression on her face and asked,

"What is with that expression?"

"Shutra, have you ever almost drowned in a bathtub?"

In-gong just smiled instead of answering. It was natural to feel the threat of drowning if it was a giant bathtub. The baths were designed for giants like Kaparang and Kappa.

Felicia settled at the table with a tired face, and In-gong used recovery magic on her. Then he pointed to the hand-painted map spread out on the table.

"This is a rough map of the area."

"Isn't this modest compared to your usual style?"

Felicia said as she peered at the map. Unlike In-gong's handmade maps which boasted a precise accuracy, this map seemed to have been created roughly.

While Felicia was combining wind and fire spirits to dry her hair, In-gong explained,

"I just copied a map from here. It is impossible to draw a perfect map of a place I haven't visited."

"Well, I guess so."

Even if he had the mini-map, there was a limit. Moreover, the trees were so large and

thick that it was difficult to draw a precise map. When the trees gathered together, they gave off the feeling of a mountain or hill.

“I will go out tomorrow for an active scout.”

In-gong spoke casually, and Felicia’s eyes narrowed.

“The forest?”

“The forest.”

He didn’t intend to just search from afar. Instead, he intended to execute an active form of scouting which attacked any enemies who were seen.

However, there were currently no barbarians in the forest because they were confronting Anastasia. The question was whether it was even necessary to do a general scouting, let alone an active scouting.

Nevertheless, the words ‘active scouting’ had emerged from his mouth.

Anastasia, the one in charge of Curtis, had left Felicia and In-gong in charge of defense near this great forest. The reason why she had placed In-gong and Felicia in a place with no enemies was simple. If they didn’t meet any enemies, they couldn’t build up merits and would have to leave empty-handed.

In-gong wasn’t going to disobey Anastasia’s orders as she was in charge of Curtis. Even so, it didn’t mean he had to sit quietly. In-gong was free to carry out military activities for defensive purposes.

“Okay, is there any place you want to go?”

In-gong pointed to one side of the map in response to Felicia’s question.

“I will go this way. I’ve heard stories of an ancient ruin in the vicinity.”

Of course, the source was Knight Saga. This was an area that In-gong wanted to visit, so he was quite excited.

‘It is because I didn’t go to this place in Night Saga.’

It was a place he hadn't been able to enter since the beginning of Knight Saga; it was impossible to go inside. There was no special reason for this. It was just a limitation of the game, like not being able to enter the sea in RPG games. However, the setting existed. There was a legend about an ancient ruin inside the forest.

It was one of the reasons why In-gong had accepted Anastasia's command to move to the rear. Killing enemies wasn't the only way to gain merits. If he found a ruin with something like the Thunder Light Anvil or contained great magic power, he would be able to obtain merits as well.

"Hoh, isn't that interesting?"

Felicia's eyes shone like lanterns after hearing about the possibility of an ancient ruin. In-gong smiled at her and said,

"Anastasia noona told us to stay on the periphery, so we should stay put. Isn't that right?"

"Yes. It is a good idea."

"The two of you look evil."

Carack clicked his tongue as he watched In-gong and Felicia.

In-gong laughed.

"We will leave immediately after breakfast tomorrow morning. I've told the giants in advance. Galang, who we met today, will guide the way. Several warrior giants will follow."

"Okay, I think this will be a very informative mission. My heart's already pounding despite the risk."

In-gong made a questioning sound at Felicia's words.

"The risk?"

"I am with Shutra."

Felicia winked at In-gong, who frowned, while Carack just laughed.

Some time passed by again. After chatting for a bit, Felicia got up from her seat. It was time to go to bed.

“Sleep well, my dream. Silvan liked this farewell the most.”

If Silvan was here, he would’ve said that. In-gong nodded.

“Good night to you as well.”

Felicia turned and left the room. In-gong’s gaze lingered at the spot where she had made her exit, then he opened his inventory and looked at the Lucia Dream Pillow.

“Prince, what is that look in your eyes?”

“What are you talking about? I am thrilled because I am thinking of tomorrow’s adventure.”

Carack asked with narrowed eyes, and In-gong closed his inventory quickly. Green Wind whispered in In-gong’s ears,

‘Master, please dream about me.’

“Oh, the flames are soaring up again.”

In-gong felt like he was suffering. Rather than refuting, In-gong headed to bed.

“This is a scam.”

Chapter 154

War Destruction #5

The giants living in the Curtis area could be classified into three types.

There were: the Gullams, a hunting clan in the vicinity of the forest; the Paran, a warrior clan near the Western Limit Line; and lastly, the Hwarin, a clan that lived scattered throughout Curtis.

Among the three clans, the Paran clan was the biggest when it came to scale.

In fact, there were only 1,000 giants, but they were giants with an average height of 10 meters. In addition to that, the combat power of the White Warriors, a group of 100 Paran warriors, was beyond imagination. The Demon King's Palace considered the combat power of the White Warriors alone as equivalent to one army consisting of thousands of soldiers.

In contrast, the smallest one was the Hwarin clan. They led livestock such as sheep and cattle all over Curtis, so there weren't more than 100 of them.

The size of the Gullam, a hunting tribe, was between the Paran and Hwarin tribes. The Gullam lived in a few villages throughout the forest, and their total population numbered approximately 300 to 400.

Those who heard about Curtis only heard about the Paran tribe, usually referred to as the 'western giants'. It wasn't because the Paran had the largest number but because they were more prominent due to their ability to maintain the Western Limit Line. They were a powerful giant clan which could be called a steel castle.

However, those who lived in Curtis and encountered the three giant tribes knew the Gullam were a mighty combat clan which didn't fall short of the Paran clan.

The Gullam hunted the animals living in the great forest. Unlike the Paran clan, who fought against the western barbarians, the Gullam considered it more glorious to fight gigantic monsters. The huge size of the giants was a minimal requirement to fight

against the monsters in the great forest.

Thus, the Gullam hunters were strong. Among the three giant clans, the Gullam had the best individual strength.

Galang, one of the three best hunters in the Gullam clan, voiced his concerns with a very serious face,

“Your Highnesses, that is a place we don’t go into that often. It is very dangerous.”

In-gong wasn’t going to the area where the Gullam usually hunted. It was a deep place which would require almost a day to reach, even with the quick pace of the giants.

In-gong climbed onto the huge map on the Gullam’s table and said.

“Don’t worry too much. I’m not going to run in recklessly.”

However, Galang still seemed concerned. Those who came to the countryside always talked this way. Galang hesitated to answer, and Felicia backed In-gong up.

“It is okay because we have Shutra. I understand your concerns, but we are children of the demon king. So, please believe in us.”

She said it with a friendly smile, but the last sentence was a type of warning. At this point, Galang realized In-gong and Felicia weren’t spoiled and immature children but the children of the demon king.

As a seasoned hunter, Galang was a quick-witted person. He understood Felicia’s warning immediately. Although the prince and princess still seemed small and tender, he hid his thoughts. Then he started thinking rationally. As Felicia had said, they were children of the demon king. This meant that unlike their appearances, they had considerable skills.

The demon king was the apex of the Demon World, the most powerful person in this world. Just like how a tiger would give birth to tigers, the demon king would have the most powerful children.

“I understand. Please forgive my rudeness.”

Felicia smiled at Galang's apology and responded,

"No, it is natural to worry. Rather, it is nice to know that you are trustworthy."

"She handled this really well."

Carack murmured as he gazed at Felicia with an admiring expression.

"It wasn't taken seriously, but I truly mean it. It will be okay if we have Shutra."

"Why is he so valuable?"

Telling Galang this meant Felicia thought he was reliable. Felicia, who travelled all over the Demon World to explore ruins, knew how important it was to cooperate with the locals. It was better to maintain a good relationship than to pressure them with her authority.

After their path was arranged to a certain extent, In-gong looked at the party and said,

"Karma, please look after Felicia noona. If something happens, your top priority is escaping with Noona."

"I understand, Your Highness."

Delia was already Felicia's escort, but that wasn't enough. Karma's quick feet meant she could lift Felicia and escape from the battlefield in an instant.

"Carack, protect Felicia noona, Karma and Delia."

"Don't worry. I'll show you what an orc shield is."

Carack smiled and raised his shield. He was wearing the new full body armour made by Amita, so he really was like a moving castle.

Finally, In-gong looked at Carlos, who was the guide soldier given by Anastasia. After taking various medicines which had been sneaked in last night, Carlos had abdominal pain, diarrhea and a headache. So, Anastasia's subordinate wasn't able to join the ruin exploration, but he looked a bit pitiful.

“Okay, then let’s depart.”

After finishing his preparations, In-gong left the village of the Gullam clan, leaving behind Carlos, who was lying down.

“I want to go back...”

It had been two hours since leaving the village, and Felicia was muttering in a small voice from her position on Galang’s back.

The weather in the forest was unusual, just like in Evian. Thanks to this weather, the forest showed a very different appearance from ordinary forests. The outskirts of the forest, where the Gullam village was located, was cool. The trees were the thin, straight types commonly found in winter forests. Despite the winter weather, it started to become hot as they headed deeper, and it soon became like a rainforest.

However, Felicia’s desire to return wasn’t due to the humid weather or the sweat all over her body.

Just like how the giants and trees were big, so were the other things in the forest. The serpents in the trees were so big that they could swallow a human in one bite. Bugs the size of a human’s head flew around, causing them great fear.

Carack, sweating in his armour, crouched on a tree and clicked his tongue as he watched a giant monkey. The monkey was watching the party like they were its prey. If Galang and the giants weren’t present, it would attack straight away.

“Now I know why only giants live in this forest.”

The elves were a species that lived in forests. However, right now, a dark elf, who could be called a relative of the elves, was showing her desire to go home.

Moreover, she was sitting on Galang’s back, so she got motion sickness. Felicia was limp, while poor Karma and Delia also seemed to be in a bad state.

Carack swallowed his saliva and looked up at the sky. White Eagle was clearly seen in the sky.

‘Master, is it cool?’

“It is cool. Green Wind is really competent.”

While everyone, including Felicia, was suffering from the heat, In-gong was enjoying the cool wind created by Green Wind. The air itself was hot, so creating wind would just cause hot air. However, In-gong solved this problem by using the ice spirit he contracted some time ago. It was simple for Green Wind to create a cool wind by filtering the air through the ice spirit.

Felicia was able to do this, but she refrained since it was a waste of magic power. However, it wasn't so hard for In-gong who had a dragon heart.

Green Wind laughed with pleasure at In-gong's praise and said,

‘Yes, I am competent and useful.’

“Yes.”

In-gong stroked the surface of White Eagle which he was sitting on and looked at the mini-map.

‘There are too many creatures with hostility.’

He was scouting from the sky, but there were too many red dots on the mini-map. It was understandable that Galang had been reluctant to go into this area.

‘It was a good choice not to bring Kappa.’

Kappa had fallen in love with Felicia and wanted to come along, but Galang and the other Gullam hunters opposed it. They judged that this journey would be too risky for a young girl to come along.

There were five Gullam hunters on this journey, including Galang. According to the calculations of the Demon King's Palace, they were equivalent to 200 soldiers. Many enemies were staring at them, but there were none who actually attacked.

It would be nice if they could arrive without any problems.

Just as In-gong was thinking this...

“Down!”

Galangs suddenly gave a loud shout. The surprised In-gong jumped up, looking down at the ground and the mini-map simultaneously. Huge vines were protruding from the ground and rushing toward the party like snakes.

“It is a carnivorous plant!”

One of the Gullam hunters exclaimed. Each of the hunters, led by Galang, swung a spear or sword at the vines. Felicia cast a magic spell hurriedly.

“Fire Barrier!”

The barrier of fire was larger than usual and spread to the sides of the party. No matter how humid the forest was, there was a lot of wood around, so it was crazy to create fire. However, In-gong had no doubts in Felicia. She controlled the flames perfectly using the fire spirit and wind spirit.

Over the past six months, Felicia had been training while following In-gong. She showed significant growth compared to how she had been six months ago.

“Too small!”

Felicia complained while sweating, but it was enough. Thanks to the barrier of fire which reached up to Gullam’s waist, the carnivorous plants didn’t dare approach In-gong’s party.

However, it was still too early to relax. There were many monsters aiming at the party through the gap created by the carnivorous plants.

“The side! Be prepared!”

Galang cried out. There was a flash as something jumped out from the left.

It was a huge monkey. The large monster, the size of Gullam’s head, leapt forward, and its power was really enormous.

Felicia screamed, while Karma and Delia swallowed their saliva. As Carack raised his shield, In-gong headed down from the sky.

It was like a white flash. In-gong flew straight toward the jaw of the leaping money and pulled back his right fist, while both legs were firmly set on White Eagle. The closer he got, the more he felt like he was heading toward a cliff.

What could he use against that huge enemy? In-gong decided to think in a straightforward manner. He concentrated aura on Earth Quaker, and it gave off an angry roar. He would use the most succinct, yet effective measure—

Explosive Power!

Kwang!

In-gong's fist struck the jaw of the monkey monster. In-gong's fist was small compared to the jaw of the huge monster. However, this wasn't a simple hit but one with an aura explosion behind it. The monkey was hit by a terrible aura and fell to the ground as soon as it jumped. Its brain was shaken by the impact, and it didn't stand back up immediately.

Simultaneously, In-gong had added momentum to Night Watch and wasn't propelled back by the backlash. He stood on the jaw of the monkey monster and calmed his breathing.

In-gong had poured a lot of aura into the attack, and fortunately, it had ended the monster.

In-gong circulated his aura as he caught his breath, and the Gullam hunters stared with surprise at In-gong's blow. Then Green Wind shouted,

'Master! The sky!'

"Protect your heads! Breath is coming!"

Galang shouted again. In-gong looked up at the sky hurriedly. A giant monster was descending rapidly from the sky toward them. In-gong had faced it in Knight Saga.

‘Wyvern!’

One of the dragon species—it wasn’t intelligent enough to write or speak magic, but it was a terrible monster. Additionally, they were able to shoot out breath attacks. The wyverns had bodies which spanned approximately 10 meters from the tip of the head to the tail. So, from the standpoint of the Gullams, the wyverns were difficult monsters to deal.

The breaths of the wyverns poured down from the sky.

There were five wyverns attacking, and instead of rushing, the five of them flew past, shooting out breaths.

Kwang kwang kwang!

There were loud explosions as five energy bombs hit the ground. Galang pulled out his bow hastily, while Felicia lifted the barrier of fire. If the barrier of fire wasn’t controlled during the chaos, a tremendous disaster could happen.

“They are coming back!”

The wyverns turned in the air and fired breaths toward the ground again. Breath was limited to three times a day, and it was the same for the wyverns. However, they were pouring the power out generously toward the party.

The shock swept up the ground again. One of the Gullam hunters was directly hit by an energy shot and collapsed to the ground. Since this was an opportunity, the wyverns tried to directly attack the person who had fallen. Galang fired arrows hurriedly, but it was impossible to keep all five of the wyverns in check.

“Shutra!”

Felicia shouted. One of the wyverns was staring at the stunned monkey monster, and a sharp atmosphere poured out from it like lightning.

In-gong looked at the wyvern. He had many thoughts in that split moment. How should he deal with it? It was the first time he had to deal with a giant flying monster like the wyvern. When he thought about it, In-gong had no means of ranged attack.

He could use Fire Arrow. However, that was impossible. The Fire Arrow was too small for the wyvern. It was possible to pour in too much magic power to create a ballista style Fire Arrow, but he wondered if that would have enough power.

Galang shot an arrow. The wyvern turned away from In-gong hastily, and a sharp strong wind swept the ground as it headed back to the sky. It was aiming for a ranged attack.

Then something came to In-gong's mind. He didn't have to be beaten to get an attack. What he wanted to do now was innate. His instincts said it was possible, and his logic agreed with his instincts. However, he couldn't help being perplexed by his thoughts.

'W-what is this? This?'

His confusion was short-lived as In-gong returned to reality again. He invoked the power of Conquest and gave an order to the dragon heart.

Felicia had said it. Since he had the dragon heart, he could use dragon magic which was a privilege of the dragons.

Dragon magic—it was the language of dragons, and the magic created the breath naturally. However, there was something more instinctual than that. There was a great power which only a person with a dragon heart could use.

The wyvern reached its peak height and prepared to attack. The rest of the wyverns tried to shoot their breaths again.

However, In-gong looked at them sharply, and the power inherent in his dragon heart—the great authority of the dragon king—was invoked!

Dragon Breath!

A green cluster of energy grew from approximately 10 centimeters away from In-gong's open mouth. It condensed until it was a pillar of light shooting into the air!

The pillar of light pierced the chest of a wyvern, and the other wyverns felt an instinctive fear toward the power of the dragon king. The flights of the other four wyverns, which had not been hit by the attack, became unstable.

[Dragon Breath Lv1 has been learnt.]

Everyone, except Galang who was firing his arrows, stared at In-gong. No, even Galang was looking at In-gong constantly.

In-gong endured their gazes and aimed another Dragon Breath at the wyverns.

“Shutra is amazing. No, you are strange. A scam.”

“Oh, this time there are some similarities, Princess.”

Chapter 155

War Destruction #6

The wyverns, who had lost two allies to In-gong's Dragon Breath, ran away. In fact, the big surprise was the Dragon Breath itself, rather than the wyverns dying.

Although it was the Dragon Breath from the most powerful dragon, its daily usage was still the same. In-gong was really glad the wyverns had escaped quickly before he only had one breath left.

The wyverns were driven out from the forest, and the animals no longer watched the party. Galang and the other Gullam hunters took care of the wyvern corpses hurriedly and focused on clearing the rear.

As the giants started to move, In-gong's group moved close together. Felicia looked at In-gong with a bemused expression and said,

"Shutra is amazing. No, you are strange—a scam."

"Oh, this time there are some similarities, Princess."

Felicia ignored what Carack said and just looked at In-gong. In-gong grinned at the party before sending Felicia a wink. She understood the meaning of his gesture and called upon a wind spirit to make a curtain which would block out any sound.

"Shutra, what is going on? That... it was Dragon Breath, right?"

It was a situation where the sound was blocked out, but Felicia lowered her voice like she was afraid someone was listening. In-gong nodded.

"Perhaps."

"Wah! Does this mean that Prince will grow wings, a tail and horns?"

Carack asked with an excited face. Clearly, he was really excited about this. However,

In-gong shook his head.

“Like I said before, it isn’t like that. Well, it might be possible if I learn polymorph magic.”

“Ohhh.”

Of course, using polymorph magic would make it a literal transformation, but he would still grow wings and a tail like Carack said.

“But the breath—was it due to the dragon heart?”

Felicia was still confused. In-gong raised his hand to the middle of his chest, where the dragon heart was, and replied,

“Yes, the Dragon Breath is more like the dragon heart’s essence, rather than a magic spell. A primal act? Anyway, it was something like that.”

Dragon Breath wasn’t like a skill or magic; it was a right that a dragon enjoyed. Therefore, the Dragon Breath was closer to the essence of a dragon, than a magic spell. It was something which would awaken instinctively, such as how a bird could fly or a fish could swim.

Felicia looked confused again at the explanation and glanced at In-gong’s chest.

“Shutra, are you already closer to a dragon than a gandharva?”

Not only could he operate a dragon heart, but he could also shoot out Dragon Breath. If he could use magic spells, then he really would be a human type dragon.

“Well, I clearly saw a characteristic of the gandharva.”

Carack said after recalling something. Felicia made a confused sound and asked,

“Characteristic of the gandharva?”

“Yes, a characteristic of the gandharva.”

Felicia turned back to In-gong and narrowed her eyes.

“Uh... Shutra is very handsome.”

“Noona is also pretty.”

In-gong responded a little shamelessly to the sudden compliment of his appearance. It was true that Felicia was pretty. However, Carack said with a frown,

“This isn’t the time to be gloating.”

In-gong shrugged while Felicia opened up her fan hurriedly. Delia, who had been watching quietly, said softly,

“Carack, beauty is a characteristic of both species. The gandharva and elves are both known as species with beautiful appearances.”

Of course, the standards would vary from species to species, but even so, there were some mainstream standards. Carack thought for a moment before nodding.

“Well, indeed. Delia is also really pretty.”

“Oh, my.”

Delia turned red at Carack’s praise, while Karma frowned with vexation.

However, Carack didn’t go any deeper. He watched Felicia and asked,

“Princess, what characteristics do the gandharva have other than appearance?”

“Uh, let’s see? As far as I know... they have a good scent and are good at dancing and singing? There was a beautiful gandharva dancer, who was part of the Eight Legions, who went around performing to each species. Oh, they are also excellent at feeling the flow. They can sense everything that has a flow, whether it is the wind or aura.”

These were pretty much all the species characteristics she knew. Carack thought for a moment before nodding.

“Well, the liquid that comes from Prince’s body is delicious. It is really unbelievably sweet and delicious.”

“What? A delicious taste?”

Felicia turned to In-gong hastily, seeming to be yelling in his face.

In-gong replied hurriedly,

“I once tried drinking my blood. If I melt the magic power in the blood, it turns into a very sweet taste.”

“Blood?”

“Not just blood... other body fluids are possible.”

He had also experimented with his saliva and sweat.

“Does Noona want to try?”

In-gong asked, and Felicia quickly waved both hands.

“Uh, no. It’s okay. It is still blood.”

“You will regret it later. It is really delicious. Don’t ask after this. My blood is precious.”

In-gong answered with nonsense and pulled back his arm again. Carack laughed and asked Felicia another question.

“Then Princess, you mentioned something about the Eight Legions? What is the Eight Legions?”

“Uh, I don’t know? Carack?”

“I also don’t know.”

“Weird.”

Felicia smiled and glanced at Delia. It was a glance for help, so Delia opened her mouth immediately.

“The Eight Legions is a group of eight species that migrated here from a distance place. There is a story that they came from a place called the Celestial World, but it is just a legend, so it isn’t accurate.”

The Eight Legions had appeared suddenly one day, but there was no evidence of where they really came from. It was thousands of years ago, so there was no one remaining who could testify about that time. The only clues were the records about the Eight Legions, but most of the records had been destroyed during the Era of Struggle. Now, it was just a legend.

“The species that belong to the Eight Legions are the gandharva, yaksha, sura, deva, karura, dragon, kinnara and mahoraga. Carack, you should have seen the yaksha and sura a few times.”

The demon king was a sura.

Carack nodded at Felicia’s words.

“I’ve seen almost all of them. But this is the first time I heard that the eight species were related.”

“Well, like I said, it is just a legend. There are some people who question the existence of the Eight Legions as species of the Demon World. However, is it that easy? It is a little bit ambiguous to point to a dragon or any other species.”

The yaksha were probably the most active of the Eight Legions in the Demon World. Most of the other Eight Legions, including the sura, were few in number.

“Ohu. Then Princess, what are the characteristics of the dark elves and the sura? Prince and Princess both carry the blood of the demon king.”

However, on the outside, the two of them didn’t seem to carry any sura blood. Right now, Felicia wasn’t much different from Delia who was a pure-blooded dark elf.

“I’ll tell you the characteristics of the dark elves. A beautiful appearance and... light and nimble body, high spirit affinity, longevity and special eyes that can see in the dark?”

As she listened to In-gong’s words, Felicia laughed. Then she continued on from his

explanation,

“The sura are a natural combat species. They have good combat senses, high stamina, resilience and recovery. Aura is also a special talent.”

They were literally a species born to fight.

“But the blood of the sura is less enthusiastic, so the children of the demon king tend to inherit more of their Omamama’s characteristics, rather than their Abamama’s. I guess the only obvious effect of Abamama’s blood is the childhood Silvan and I had.”

“Childhood?”

“The other dark elves have a fairly long childhood. But Silvan and I aren’t much different from Shutra, Caitlin and Chris.”

“Ah, is that so? Maybe Prince fights well due to the blood of the demon king.”

Carack nodded his head like he was convinced.

After the explanations, Felicia turned to In-gong.

“Anyway, the Dragon Breath is really amazing and strange. Shutra, can you shoot it from anywhere other than your mouth?”

Although it seemed natural to shoot Dragon Breath from his mouth, some discomfort was unavoidable.

In-gong shrugged and replied,

“I’m glad it isn’t being shot from my eyes. And I’m also glad that it is in the form of a light pillar. If it was fire, the situation would’ve become worse.”

“Indeed.”

Felicia nodded slowly as she imagined In-gong shooting fire from his mouth. The pillar of light did seem easier to form and had less discomfort.

“Well, Noona, I think we should keep the dragon heart a secret from Galang and the

Gullam hunters. Should I just say that it is a powerful magic or skill?"

There was a reason for blocking the sound around the party. Felicia immediately understood In-gong's words.

"Indeed, I don't think it would be good if Anastasia unni hears about this. Let's do so."

He didn't know if he would have to fight against Anastasia, but it was better to keep some things hidden. The more trump cards he had, the better.

Once the story was finished to a certain extent, Felicia put away the wind spirit. Then the Gullam hunters came up to In-gong's party, and they all said the same thing.

"Drakon Kechatulla."

"Drakon Kechatulla."

"Drakon Kechatulla!"

It was a situation where even the reticent Galang had said it. Felicia and his companions all looked back at In-gong reflexively. All of them seemed to be asking In-gong about the meaning.

"I don't know... the 'great dragon warrior'?"

It was a language he didn't know, but he did now. The woman's voice was heard in his head.

[Ancient Giants Language Lv1 has been learnt.]

The language of the ancient giants... In-gong stared at the words which seemed to be hiding something, but Felicia waved a hand in his face.

"It is convenient, but I'm starting to feel angry like I'm being deprived of something."

She worked hard to learn each letter. If she didn't use it often, she would forget them.

While Felicia was grunting angrily, Galang lowered his face. He stared straight at In-

gong and declared,

“Drakon Kechatulla. Finally, the incarnation of the dragon has returned.”

There was an almost pious expression in Galang’s eyes, and it wasn’t simply because he was amazed at In-gong.

“It seems like there is something more.”

Carack said, and In-gong agreed. He looked up and Galang and said,

“Tell me the story.”

There was something which was passed down within the Gullam clan.

It was the image of a human, who was the incarnation of a dragon, fighting against a wicked red serpent god in order to protect the world. The incarnation of the dragon fighting against the serpent god wasn’t a prediction of the future but a depiction of the past.

Felicia broke down every part of the story Galang told them. Originally, the story was made up of parables and symbols.

Felicia replaced Galang’s words one by one.

‘The world was the forest. The evil serpent god was a dragon. The human shaped incarnation of a dragon can be interpreted in different ways. It could be a warrior supported by a good dragon or a good dragon which polymorphed into the form of a person.’

At Enger Plains, there was the story of the centaur warrior who had protected the north after receiving White Eagle.

“Going by that... is there a relic associated with a dragon in the area?”

Felicia came to this conclusion, and In-gong agreed.

“It is most likely a dragon lair.”

Perhaps it was a place associated with an elder dragon. Even if it wasn't an elder dragon, it was the lair of a dragon which had lived thousands of years ago. So, it was a jackpot.

“My motivation is rising.”

Felicia forgot about the sweat and the other worries she had in the past as she murmured.

In-gong looked at Galang and asked,

“Galang, is this also told among the Paran and Hwarin?”

“The roots of all three giant clans are the same. The story about the incarnation of the dragon is also handed down among the Paran and Hwarin.”

Galang's attitude toward In-gong was much more cautious than before. There was a reverence which couldn't be hidden.

The incarnation of the great dragon...

If the Paran and Hwarin shared the same story, then they were likely to react in a similar manner to Galang.

In-gong remembered the centaurs of Enger Plains and nodded silently. As Felicia said, having more trump cards was good.

“Let's go find the ruin.”

There was still time left before the sun set. The party's footsteps accelerated.

Chapter 156

War Destruction #7

The large forest was wider than In-gong had imagined. As they ventured deeper, In-gong's anxiety grew.

'This is the right direction.'

The information he'd gathered from Knight Saga gave an estimated location of the ruins, but he hadn't experienced it directly. The forest was so wide that even if the rough direction was right, any slight error would make them arrive at a remote location.

'I hope that the ruin stays the same size.'

As with everything else in the forest, if the ruins were too big, he might have trouble finding it on the mini-map. Therefore, In-gong focused on the mini-map while riding on White Eagle.

Two hours later...

"This is the first time I've passed by this area."

Galang said in a voice which was filled with admiration and respect. The other Gullam hunters were also very excited.

Galang and his group were excited about being about to go into this area.

There was a colony of red ants in the area. Just like everything else in the forest, the ants were enormous and almost the size of a human body. There were thousands of ants, and the ground itself seemed to be red.

Even Felicia, who had seen many things, had to cover her eyes at the terrible sight, but that wasn't the only problem.

Galang called the red ants, the Flaming Ants. It wasn't due to their red colour but because of their nature. The Flaming Ants covered anything in their territory, without caring about living or dying. Thousands of red ants covered the bodies of their victims and ate them instantly, giving them a resemblance to the flame ants.

However, the party simply passed through the area of the fire ants. Half of it was thanks to Felicia's barrier of fire and the other half was thanks to In-gong's new power.

"Won't people get out of your way every day?"

Carack said brief words of appreciation, and In-gong responded with a bitter smile. He didn't want to deny it, but the newly awakened power was something he hadn't thought about.

Dragon Fear—

It was a dragon's innate power, just like the Dragon Breath.

As its name suggested, Dragon Fear was the ability to instill fear into the beings around him.

As soon as he realized it was innate just like Dragon Breath, he could use it immediately.

It was only level one, so the impact range was small, but the effect was obvious. In-gong used Dragon Fear, and the colony of ants opened up a path for them. Through this open path, Felicia expanded her fire barrier, creating a truly safe passage.

"Drakon Kechatulla."

"Drakon Kechatulla!"

While the Gullam hunters honoured him, In-gong looked at the mini-map. The reason he had descended from the sky down to the ground hadn't been just to break through the colony of ants. The location of the ruins was shown on the mini-maps, so it was no longer necessary for him to stay in the sky.

Fortunately, their direction was still correct. They just needed to travel a little further to arrive at the ruins.

“It will be breathtaking.”

Night was approaching. Perhaps by the time they arrived at the ruin, the sun would just be setting.

Of course, camping in the forest was a risk. There was a reason why the Gullam lived in the outskirts of the forest, away from their hunting grounds. At night, the prey would become the hunters. There were also many nocturnal animals which didn't show up during the day. If they camped in the wrong place, they might never wake up again.

Could they find a camping spot near the ruins? If they couldn't find the right place, they would have to camp inside the actual ruins.

In fact, it was common during exploration to set up camp sites within the ruins. There were walls and ceilings, so it was easier to secure their safety inside, than a place where every side was open.

The question was whether the ruins were dangerous. They wouldn't know if there was anything inside until they searched it from beginning to end. An unexpected spell might be activated while they were sleeping, or they could be attacked by a dungeon monster or protector of the ruins.

In that case, the walls and ceilings would become obstacles to isolate the party.

“I think that I am worrying too much.”

There was the possibility of danger, but risks always existed when going into ruins.

Felicia looked away from the Flaming Ants and expressed her opinion,

“If there is a multi-floor structure, even if a magic trap is activated, it is unlikely to affect the whole ruins, and we will be ready for magic from the beginning. There were always traces of the magic circuit left behind. And if we camp near the entrance, it won't be so difficult to escape.”

Felicia was the one with the most experience in ruins exploration. Carack nodded and asked,

“Don’t you just dislike camping in the forest?”

“Ah, no? Do I have to justify this to you? Would you prefer mud instead of walls, ceilings and hard floors?”

Felicia wasn’t embarrassed and said it openly.

While everyone was laughing, In-gong focused his gaze on a place far away. It was a big empty space beyond the bushes.

“Ohh...”

Galang and the other Gullam hunters gave cries of admiration. They had lived in the forest all their lives, but they had never imagined there would be such a vacant place.

Felicia looked around from Galang’s shoulder. The vacant lot was hundreds of meters in diameter and was much lower than the surrounding areas, like a type of basin. In the middle of the empty space, In-gong saw a stone structure. The entrance of the ruins was just high enough for the Gullam to pass through.

“Are these underground ruins? Maybe this isn’t a dragon lair.”

Felicia muttered in a small voice. The dragon lair was the nest of a dragon, so a big entrance leading to the outside was needed. Of course, Kaltein’s lair in Sun Lake didn’t have such an entrance, but that was a rare case.

In-gong rose on White Eagle to a point where he was eye level with Galang.

“Let’s explore the area around the entrance. Arranging a camping place is imperative.”

As expected, the sun was setting. They had to search for a campsite before it became dark.

“I understand.”

Galang answered sincerely before rushing toward the ruins.

There were no traces of magic power at the entrance to the ruin. The walls were solidly laid and didn't seem to have any added magic power.

The amazing thing was the air inside the ruin. In contrast to the humid forest, the air inside was very cold and dry. It was a double layered structure which led underground like Felicia speculated, and it had a spell at the underground side.

"This is a very old ruin. At least 5,000 years... maybe more than that."

Felicia got down from Galang and spoke while touching the walls of the stone ruin. She used a type of magic which could measure age, like carbon dating.

The ceiling of the ruins was very high for In-gong's group, but not for the Gullam hunters. In particular, Galang was the tallest and felt quite frustrated because there was only one palm height between his head and the ceiling.

Fortunately, the corridor was quite wide. There was plenty of space so that three Gullam hunters could walk side by side at the same time. Galang led the party into the ruins while holding a torch. Outside the ruins, it was already dark.

"I don't feel any signs of movement inside. There isn't even a big animal."

Galang said with narrowed eyes. He was somewhat puzzled.

Ruins with their walls and ceilings were a haven for many animals and plants. Due to this, there were usually many dungeon monsters and various flora and fauna inside old ruins.

In-gong was reminded of the dwarf cave he had used when fighting against the Red Lightning tribe. There had been rock spiders and other flora and fauna inside the cave.

"Although there seems to be... bugs. We can rest easily."

Felicia looked at the Carack-sized spider on the ceiling. Even though there were no big animals, there were still living creatures. It wasn't unreasonable to camp overnight here.

The inside of the ruins was basically a straight corridor, with several rooms on the left and right. It seemed like the corridor would become a crossroad if they went deeper,

but In-gong's group stopped exploring in front of the first room.

"Let's make preparations for the camp."

There were walls and ceilings, but this wasn't enough. There was a large room which was 50 meters long. This wasn't big for the Gullams, especially Galang, but they made sure it was well-ventilated before setting up a campfire. The room was soon filled with a red light.

It was bare of any furniture, and the ceilings and walls were old, so it was hard to find traces of anything.

"We should set it up."

In-gong nodded at Felicia's words and opened his inventory. Unlike the Gullams who were ready after the campfire, In-gong's group still had a lot of work to do.

In-gong took out all the materials to build a big tent. He then pulled out the sleeping bags and cooking utensils. The last thing he took out was a bathtub made of pottery.

"Shutra is the best! Too convenient!"

Felicia touched the bathtub excitedly. Galang and the other Gullam hunters stared at In-gong with wide eyes.

"I'm getting used to this now."

Carack set up the tent with Karma, and Delia opened a screen and large parasol around the bathroom to set up a bathing room. It was a place without a waterway or well, but it didn't matter. Felicia called the water spirit and filled the bathtub instantly. She didn't forget to use the fire spirit to heat up the water as well.

In-gong then pulled out a leather rug to place it on the bottom of the tent. Despite not bringing a big bag, the campsite was like a luxury accommodation with a kitchen and bathing room.

"Shutra, I'll wash first."

Felicia had been sweating all day, so she couldn't be happier. She took Delia and Karma

into the temporary bathing room. They had a change of clothes because of In-gong's inventory. In-gong used magic to light a fire with the firewood Carack had collected, then he took out cold beverages and handed them to Carack.

As the Gullam hunters kept staring in surprise, Carack look at the cold beer in his hand and laughed.

"I once again realized that I am on a trip with a prince."

In-gong was able to provide a camp of this luxury in a short amount of time. This was because Felicia could use magic and spirits for easy convenience, while In-gong could fit various equipment in his inventory.

"I'm sorry. The size of the Gullams means this was the only thing I could bring for you."

In-gong's face filled with regret as he brought out large spice shakers almost the size of a human body, which contained salt and pepper.

"Thank you for this."

Galang laughed and put the wyvern meat onto the campfire. As the smell of roasting meat spread, there was the risk of gathering beasts from the forest. However, the party had Green Wind. Green Wind gathered the smell of roasting meat and blew it far away into the sky.

"Well, even I think it is a scam."

In-gong said as he sat on a chair and watched Carack cook. Felicia and the women left the bath almost half an hour later.

In-gong suddenly opened his eyes. He was in a small one-person tent. There were animal skins and a few blankets on the floor, with Green Wind sleeping beside him. She had a warm body temperature in a solid form, while she was a cool breeze in her semi-solid form.

At first, he was a bit embarrassed about sleeping next to her, but he was so used to it now that he couldn't sleep well without Green Wind.

In-gong blinked a few times while stroking Green Wind's head reflexively. He hadn't simply been woken from his sleep.

'Master?'

Green Wind asked in a sleepy voice. Despite being a guardian which didn't need to sleep, she felt sleepy due to her experiences in the past.

Instead of answering, In-gong got up. He summoned a small light spirit and left the tent.

"Your Highness?"

Galang, who was standing guard, turned toward In-gong. The rest of the Gullam hunters were gathered around the campfire, while Felicia, Delia and Karma's tent was quiet. Carack was lying at the entrance of In-gong's tent and opened his eyes with a loud grumble.

"Prince?"

In-gong didn't answer. He raised a hand for Galang and Carack to remain still.

No sounds could be heard. There was only the sound of wind passing through the hallway. However, In-gong knew instinctively—no, he could feel it.

Drakon Kechatulla...

The great dragon warrior—

Its voice was calling In-gong.

Chapter 157

War Destruction #8

“Um, did something wake you up?”

Carack said as he rubbed his eyes. His sleepy voice was full of confusion. He listened for a long time but didn’t hear anything.

In-gong was too focused to answer. He heard a call from deep inside the ruins. It was more like a feeling than a voice.

“Your Highness, I feel something as well... something like a call. But it isn’t a voice. It is hard to explain.”

Galang said with narrowed eyes. He had a serious nature, so he wouldn’t make up something like this.

“Umm.”

Carack looked at the reactions from Galang and the other Gullam hunters before trying to concentrate again. It was something only In-gong and the Gullam hunters could feel.

‘Master, there is a reaction from White Eagle.’

He heard Green Wind’s voice. In-gong turned back and White Eagle, which contained Green Wind, was shaking. He could feel it when he put his hand on the surface of the shield—White Eagle was now resonating with something.

‘An equipment of an elder dragon?’

It was different. Although there was a similar feeling to when he got Night Watch, the call from inside the ruins wasn’t like the resonance between elder dragons.

As a test, In-gong tried to take out Earth Quaker and Night Watch. Both of the elder dragon equipment was resonating like White Eagle, but the degree of resonance was

different. Earth Quaker was the most non-responsive, while White Eagle had the biggest response.

“Prince, will you leave immediately?”

Carack asked carefully as he watched In-gong. Instead of answering, In-gong looked toward the tent where Felicia was sleeping. Despite the disturbance, she was fast asleep, and there was no response.

In-gong checked the clock of the mini-map and said,

“We should wait for the sun to rise. Everyone is tired from having to break through the forest. I don’t know what is inside, but there is no need to rush. Let’s rest for a while.”

It was a forest where their stamina weakened just by walking due to the heat and humidity. Additionally, they were tense from watching out for various plants and animals.

“But Prince. Won’t your nerves be irritated by the call?”

Carack stared at In-gong with worry. In-gong just shrugged at Carack’s question.

“It isn’t big enough that I can’t ignore it. It is similar to the cry of a cicada?”

If the noise was repeated regularly, it would become familiar. Carack nodded.

“I understand, but don’t ignore it too much. If you can’t stand it, speak up right away.”

“Yes, let’s take a look at in the morning.”

In-gong said and went back inside his tent.

The next morning, the party packed up and left the room. Except for In-gong, the rest of the party were carried by the Gullam hunters.

Felicia called the light spirit to replace the torches. The consumption of magic power was somewhat severe since this was a big space, but the inside of the corridor became

bright like daytime.

“It really looks like an old place.”

Despite the fact that the inside of the structure wasn't affected by storms, the walls were severely damaged. Ornaments and other similar things were so broken that they were hard to recognize.

As Galang said, the inside of the ruins was calm, and there were no signs of inhabitants. Sometimes, the sound of bugs could be heard in the distance.

A staircase descended approximately 200 to 300 meters. It was a very long staircase.

The structure of the second underground floor wasn't much different from the first floor. There were two large holes which were for the corridor, and several small rooms were attached to the corridor.

“This is like an army barrack.”

“Army barrack?”

In-gong asked Carack to clarify his words. Carack scratched his chin as he searched for the words to explain.

“That, Prince, haven't you seen it a few times at Evian? The accommodation where the soldiers stay are usually like this. Karma, isn't that right?”

“Uh... the barrack I stayed in wasn't that big.”

Karma often moved with the centaurs, who had a nomadic lifestyle. It was no wonder she hadn't experienced this type of military barrack. While Karma remained embarrassed, Felicia spoke up,

“According to Carack, could this ruin be the barrack of the ancient giants? That is a pretty interesting opinion.”

It had been 100 years since the three giant clans of Curtis joined the Demon King's Palace, so it was quite recent. It wouldn't be strange if there had been a giant kingdom in the past.

“Galang, how long have the Gullam clan lived in this forest?”

Felicia asked from Galang’s shoulder. Galang slowed down like he was afraid of hurting Felicia and said,

“I only know that it has been a very long time. Just that... during the Era of Struggle, there was a story about living deep in the forest.”

The Gullam clan had lost their records thanks to the Era of Struggle. In fact, it had been an unusual case for the dark elves to be able to retain incomplete records. The Era of Struggle had been a harsh period when species warfare continued every day.

“Let’s continue.”

In-gong listened to the story and ordered Green Wind to go a little further ahead. The group, led by In-gong on White Eagle, headed toward the third floor from the second floor.

As they descended deeper into the ground, the ruin became narrower, and the concentration of magic power in the air became thicker. Unlike the first and second floor, a few things remained on the third floor.

“This seems to be a weapons storage.”

There were shelves in a large room which contained spears and swords, however, they were all very old and broken. There was a large metal armour on the ground which turned to powder when it was touched. Looking at the design, there seemed to be a string or leather which connected the metal, but it seemed to be lost.

The party continued to head underground. Every time they headed down, the call became louder. By the time they reached the fifth underground floor, even the Gullam hunters could feel the call without paying particular attention.

Then after arriving on the seventh underground floor, the party gulped. Unlike the other floors which had nothing on them, the remains of a giant sitting on a throne was in the middle of the room.

It seemed to be taller than Galang, who was a big Gullam, and was wearing fairly old

armour. In front of the giant's remains, a large sword was stuck in the ground.

'Master.'

Green Wind whispered, and In-gong nodded. The origin of the call was the giant sword.

Drakon Kechatulla—

It was the dragon warrior from the legend of the giants, and the hero who had defended the world against the evil red serpent god.

In-gong neared the giant sword on White Eagle. Unlike the other objects in the ruin, the giant black sword was almost intact. The handle was in a dragon shape, and there were a long blade. It wasn't an exaggeration to call it a big pillar since it needed to be big enough for giants to use.

In-gong took a deep breath and pulled after placing both hands on the sword's handle. Thanks to his level up, he had been able to overwhelm the berserk Caitlin with his strength. In his attempt to pull the sword out, In-gong's muscles swelled as he applied force. The giant sword shook greatly, then it was pulled out.

"Ohh."

Carack let out a cry of admiration, while Felicia couldn't conceal her expression at the absurdity of In-gong holding the giant sword. The Gullam hunters were also surprised.

'Master, too heavy.'

Green Wind whined as In-gong held the handle. However, In-gong didn't hear it as he closed his eyes.

The giant sword was no longer calling out to In-gong now that he was holding it—In-gong just understood it. The giant sword was like a relic of an elder dragon, but it was different from White Eagle, Earth Quaker and Night Watch.

It was older. It came from the distant past. Its nature was different as well. It was difficult to explain, but it was obviously made for a different purpose than the equipment of the elder dragons he had obtained so far.

[Giant King's Sword]

[A sword belonging to the leader of the giants.]

In-gong opened his eyes slowly and looked around to see Galang and the other Gullam warriors on their knees.

“Drakon Kechatulla.”

“Drakon Kechatulla.”

It was the power of the sword, and it wasn't just a symbol, like the Dragon King's Golden Helmet. This was a power that could affect the giants directly.

In-gong placed the Giant King's Sword into his inventory. At this moment, Galang raised his head. It was a response like he had broken free of something. The Gullam hunters looked at each other with surprised expressions and rushed to get up.

“Shutra?”

Felicia jumped down from Galang, approached In-gong and asked a question. In-gong fell to the ground as well as he replied,

“It felt like an elder dragon was touching me. But it is different from Earth Quaker or White Eagle.”

The feeling was certain, but there was no way to explain it specifically. In-gong asked Green Wind,

“Green Wind, can you feel anything?”

“Um, I don't know. It is familiar but also strange. It is a different feeling from when I encountered Earth Quaker or Night Watch. At that time, I didn't feel like it was strange.”

Green Wind too felt a sensation similar to what In-gong felt.

Felicia looked at In-gong and Green Wind because Green Wind didn't seem like a

simple guardian. In-gong smiled bitterly at Felicia's gaze. Now that he thought about it, he had never discussed the origin of Green Wind. In-gong truly did have many secrets.

"The origin of Green Wind is Ainkel. A fragment of Ainkel's soul became self-reliant and gave birth to the guardian, Green Wind."

In-gong explained briefly, and Felicia's eyes shone.

"The soul of an elder dragon?"

"Hmm, hmm, that's right. I am such a being."

Green Wind raised her jaw and took a holy pose, just like the first time In-gong met her. However, Felicia had already witnessed different types of things. Carack, who had seen the Great Enkidu from the Thunder Light Anvil, made a disappointed expression.

"The fantasy of the elder dragons is breaking."

Delia nodded as she has also seen the illusion of Enkidu. Enkidu had truly felt like a great being in that illusion. Green wind made a dissatisfied expression as even Karma, who had once worshipped her, didn't show any response. Felicia looked around and said,

"Anyway, these ruins has to do with a dragon... Is there some type of relationship between the elder dragons and the giants?"

"Maybe."

The Giant King's Sword had the ability to rule the giants. He didn't know the extent of the dominance, but if the elder dragon made such a sword, there was likely to be a much closer relationship than he thought.

The dragon warrior who had fought against the red serpent god...

In-gong looked back at the throne. After the Giant King's Sword was pulled out, the remains and armour of the giant king had fallen down. It was like time had accelerated.

It wasn't just the remains of the giant king which started to collapse. The whole place

started to shake. At first, it was only slight but the shaking became increasingly bigger.

“Prince!”

Carack exclaimed urgently. Karma grabbed Felicia in a flash and jumped on top of Galang, while Delia also rushed forward. In-gong gestured to Carack as he jumped on White Eagle.

“Run!”

The Gullam hunters started to run as rocks were falling from the ceiling.

These were ruins which had seven underground floors. If they didn’t hurry, they would be crushed by the ruin.

The Gullam hunters ran desperately, but time was the problem. By the time they reached the second floor, the shaking of the ruin was almost at the level of an earthquake. The floor cracked, and the ceiling was crumbling.

“Ohhhh!”

Galang shouted and took the lead. He used the fact that the ceiling was low to step on the rubble and jump to the ground floor.

‘Master!’

The moment that Green Wind screamed, In-gong used Dragon Breath. He used it to shatter the stone which was blocking the middle of the hallway on the first floor.

The light was near. Instead of running, Galang and the Gullam hunters threw themselves at the light. They rolled on the ground but were able to get out in time. As the last Gullam hunter hit the ground, the entrance of the ruins collapsed completely.

In-gong hurried toward the Gullam hunters. The people they carried were lying on the ground, but they were fortunately unharmed. Their bodies had been thrown before the Gullam hunters landed on the ground.

Carack had a tough body, while Amita’s armour had absorbed the shock for Delia. Karma landed smoothly on the ground while carrying Felicia. She staggered

somewhat, but due to being a sturdy satyr, she stood firmly without falling.

After confirming the safety of the party, In-gong looked back at the ruins. There was a hole in the ground where the seven floors had collapsed, and the ground was still shaking as the collapse continued.

“Huu.”

The Giant King’s Sword was the source of the magic which sustained the ruin. After letting out a long exhale, In-gong opened his inventory and looked at the Giant King’s Sword. Although there were some questions left, the result was a success.

It was clear the elder dragons had a conflict with the four beings of Conquest, War, Death and Famine. Therefore, looking into the Giant King’s Sword and red serpent god had a high chance of allowing him to discover new facts.

‘I got my hands on the Giant King’s Sword.’

Furthermore, thanks to this exploration, he had become aware of Dragon Breath and Dragon Fear. It was a fairly successful result for two days of exploration.

In-gong couldn’t help smiling before he urged the party to move. They hurriedly left the basin where the ruins used to be.

Later that night...

The incubus, Carlos, ran toward In-gong’s party which had returned to the Gullam village. Carack listened to what Carlos was gasping out and exclaimed,

“4th Princess is in danger?!”

...4th Princess Anastasia Nekrion, the person in charge of Curtis!

Felicia and Green Wind looked at In-gong reflexively. The Carlos shouted,

“Ah, no! Your Highness! It is a big deal! The transportation formation has been destroyed!”

“Transportation formation?”

Curtis transportation formation was in the center, not the outskirts. Who would attack the place when it was a few days away from the front lines?

“What transportation formation is it?”

Felicia asked hurriedly. The dark elf reinforcements still hadn't arrived through the transportation formation. It was be frustrating if the transportation formation which connected to the territory of the dark elves was destroyed.

However, Carlos' reaction was abnormal. He shouted with a face full of despair,

“It isn't just one! All of Curtis' transportation formations have been attacked!”

It was a simultaneous strike. This wasn't something the barbarians located behind the Western Limit Line could do.

The destruction of the transportation formations was to stop reinforcements from the Demon King's Palace. What happened? And what was going to happen from now on?

In-gong gazed toward the north-west, in the direction of the location of the 4th Princess Anastasia and 3rd Prince Victor.

Chapter 158

Exacerbation

The barbarians beyond the Western Limit Line had a distinctly different appearance from the barbarians beyond the Eastern Limit Line.

Their average height was over two meters, and they had blue skin. Their long coarse tails were reminiscent of a lizard's, giving them a strong and flexible third hand or foot. That wasn't all. There were usually one or two horns on their heads, with red or black eyes from which the whites parts were absent.

Among the tribes living in the Curtis region, the main ones were orcs which could be found anywhere in the Demon World. The next most common were lizardmen and harpies. There were also a handful of lamia.

Among the species in Curtis, none had an appearance similar to the western barbarians. Due to this, the western barbarians would stand out if they were in Curtis.

This was what made them different from the eastern barbarians. The western barbarians couldn't infiltrate Curtis like the eastern barbarians had done in Takar and Evian. Moreover, Curtis wasn't a lawless zone like Evian, nor was it a city like Takar where many species came and went. It was almost impossible for the western barbarians to penetrate deep into Curtis and attack the transportation formations all at the same time.

If so, who had done this? Who had destroyed the transportation formations? There wasn't much information transmitted through communicators installed in the Gullam villages.

'The transportation formation has been attacked. Other places seem to be under attack at the same time as well. The transportation formation has been destroyed.'

Those words were shrieked, but there was no further information.

Felicia took deep breaths. The transportation formations generally had weak

defenses. Attacking the transportation formations was an act of treason against the Demon King's Palace, so it was rare for anyone to try it. They were also mainly located inland, so they weren't exposed to the enemies.

It was very shallow thinking, but she hadn't been aware of the vulnerabilities until the transportation formation had been attacked.

Felicia thought deeply. As Carlos shouted, the entire transportation formation network in Curtis had been destroyed. Carlos had received the communication about the attack an hour ago. There was no additional communication, so it was reasonable to presume they had been destroyed.

Curtis had five transportation formations, so it would take a lot of organization to attack the five transportation formations at the same time without much of a time difference. Despite the weak defenses, it was a facility of the Demon King's Palace and wasn't a place which could be overthrown with impatience. Significant organizational skills and strength were required to suppress the entire transportation formation without anyone suspecting.

As she visualized all the conditions, an answer arose naturally. However, it was an answer she didn't want to admit.

Felicia looked at In-gong. It was evident In-gong was thinking the same thing. Carack asked Carlos more questions.

Had he contacted Anastasia? There was no word from the front lines.

They shouldn't expect any instructions from Anastasia, so they had to go and check out the situation.

Carlos stammered out, "There were no instructions from Anastasia. The only communication from the nearest military facility was a command to wait."

Carack asked who managed the facility.

Felia, In-gong, Felicia and Carack swallowed their saliva as they waited for Carlos' reply.

Carlos' answer was short and terrible,

“T-the Paran tribe.”

One of Curtis’ three giant clans. They were a powerful force called the barrier of the Western Limit Line.

Carack looked at In-gong. Although it was just a hypothesis, In-gong, Carack and Felicia all thought the same thing.

The Paran clan had betrayed them.

The life of information was speed.

By delaying the transmission of information, the eyes and ears of people could be covered.

The news that the transportation formations had been destroyed didn’t reach Anastasia. There was a long distance between the fortress where she was and the transportation formations—a distance which couldn’t be seen with the naked eye. If the news wasn’t transmitted, there would be no way for Anastasia to know about the fall of the transportation formations.

It was the chief of the Paran clan, Berkintox, who had blocked the information. Once all five of Curtis’ transportation formations were destroyed by the Hwarin, he stood on a fortress overlooking the Western Limit Line.

The plan was proceeding smoothly. The transportation formations were destroyed, and the news hadn’t spread. He couldn’t completely block the delivery of the information to some areas in the rear, but that wasn’t a big problem. The important thing was that the main base wasn’t aware of the destruction.

The destruction of the transportation formations meant that intervention from the Demon King’s Palace was blocked. By the time the reinforcements entered Curtis, the situation would already be over. Even if they sent a large army, the result would still be the same.

After receiving the reports from his loyal men, Berkintox proceeded to the next step.

It was an easy task to occupy the fortresses connected to the limit line. The nightmares Anastasia had dispatched to the fortresses didn't doubt the Paran clan due to their exchanges over the past month. The history of the Paran tribe, who had devoted their loyalty to the Demon King's Palace over the past hundreds of years without any treason, was also helpful.

The incubi were all killed while the succubi were left as gifts for those who would soon be arriving.

The reports continued—all three fortresses in the vicinity of the limit line were in the hands of the Paran clan.

Berkintox ordered them to open their gates. The fortress gates, which had been closed firmly for many years, opened up and accepted the barbarians beyond the Western Limit Line.

The barbarians walked into Curtis and were delighted to receive the succubi, the gift from Berkintox. They accepted the alliance with the Paran tribe, who had killed them for many years, without hesitation. The reason for this was simple—the being behind both of them was the same one.

After crossing the limit line, the barbarians moved quickly. Exactly half of them moved to occupy the fortresses near the limit line, while the other half dug deeper into Curtis. They headed to the central fortress where Anastasia was staying.

It had been approximately one hour since the start of the attack on the transportation formations.

Around the time In-gong and Felicia suspected the Paran clan's betrayal, numerous deaths occurred on the front lines where the information had been blocked off.

The troops who were guarding the fortresses faithfully, greeted their deaths without knowing about the Paran tribe's betrayal. The orcs, who raised their spears and swords on the walls, had to watch helplessly as the gates opened.

Berkintox thought it would take two hours. Indeed, it went according to his thoughts.

Anastasia only realized what was happening after an hour had passed and the surrounding fortresses had fallen.

Anastasia wasn't incompetent, however, Berkintox had effectively masked her eyes and ears.

The barbarians surrounded the central fortress. Sadly for Berkintox and the barbarians, the gates didn't open easily this time. It was because Anastasia had hastened to act after realizing what had happened.

Indeed, she led one of the three major factions in the Demon King's Palace for a reason. After noticing the Paran clan's betrayal, she took control of the central fortress instantly. However, by that time, it was too late. Once two hours had passed like Berkintox had anticipated, Anastasia was isolated in the middle of the barbarians.

Berkintox acknowledged Anastasia's capabilities, but he was also well aware of her limits. It was why he didn't rush to the central fortress and cut off her neck.

It was up to the barbarians to make the central fortress fall. Some of the barbarians and orcs, who had betrayed the Demon King's Palace, spoke about Anastasia's slyness, but their words were insignificant to Berkintox.

He led the Paran warriors past the central fortress to secure the rear bases which might be confused by the sudden command to wait.

It had been two to three hours since the transportation formations had been destroyed. General Sorak, an orc, reported urgent news to Berkintox.

"Victor is outside the fortress!"

3rd Prince Victor Negrion...

He was the older brother of 4th Princess Anastasia Negrion and a powerful magician. Victor had led a group of troops to inspect the facilities and villages to the south of the central fortress. It was a fact Berkintox didn't know because Victor had moved secretly.

The generally bold Sorak was restless. Victor was a child of the demon king, and he wasn't an easy opponent. It was clear he would gather the troops in the south to rescue Anastasia. So, right now, he should be returning to the central fortress to help support

it.

However, Berkintox didn't think so. Having seen Anastasia and Victor over the past month, he found a serious error in them Sorak didn't know about.

"It is more important to keep moving forward and take control of the rear bases. The barbarians will take care of Princess Anastasia as planned."

Hearing this, Sorak yelled and questioned Berkintox. Securing Anastasia was important, and it wasn't because she was a powerful magician.

Securing Anastasia was a means to overwhelm those who didn't agree with them or who had yet to grasp the full scope of the situation. It was also aimed at getting rid of those who were loyal to the Demon King's Palace.

However, Berkintox was just leaving her alone. What if Victor really went to rescue Anastasia?

"He won't go."

Berkintox declared, while Sorak wondered what he was talking about.

Berkintox recalled his memories of Anastasia and Victor instead of explaining, and he couldn't help laughing bitterly.

Victor Nekrion stared into the darkness. His aide, the succubus, Perope, listed the information discovered so far.

All the transportation formations had been destroyed. The fortresses at the Western Limit Line had opened their gates, and the barbarians had taken over all the fortresses in the area. The process had been so easy that there had to be traitors.

The number of barbarians surrounding the central fortress couldn't be grasped, and there were no troops nearby to support the central fortress. It had been besieged, and the number of barbarians kept growing. It was estimated that monsters beyond the limit line had also crossed over.

Time continued to flow, and with every minute and second that passed, the situation became worse.

Should he go and save Anastasia with his current forces? If there were strikes from the inside and outside, he could get her out somehow.

Victor made calculations in his head, then he came to a conclusion.

“Don’t go.”

The chance of saving Anastasia was too low, and it would become worse if Victor tried to save her.

“Anastasia would have the same idea.”

Victor turned around with no signs of regret. Perope, a long time aide of Victor, looked in the direction of the central fortress where Anastasia was but didn’t try to persuade Victor otherwise.

This was a rational judgment, not one due to sentiment or emotion. Like Victor said, Anastasia would be thinking the same thing.

Victor moved to the south instead of the north, where the central fortress was located. He planned to secure the southern troops which had yet to fall into the hands of the traitors.

It was late at night. While everyone else was sleeping, it was the time when the minds of the nightmares were the clearest.

Anastasia accepted the situation which was changing rapidly. She pushed down her anger at the treachery and made efforts to grasp the situation. It wasn’t good. This was a desperate situation. The time to hurry and retreat had already passed. The central fortress was completely surrounded, and the attack would start soon.

Anastasia took a deep breath. Her aide, the succubus, Chandra, begged her despite knowing it wouldn’t work.

‘Run away alone.’ If she were alone, she would be able to escape somehow as the siege wasn’t complete yet.

However, Anastasia wouldn’t listen. She wasn’t someone who could throw away her people and run away alone. It wasn’t because of affection. She didn’t love the people below her. However, it was her duty and responsibility as someone in a higher position.

The nightmares were on the fortress walls, preparing to stop the attack. The soldiers encouraged each other by saying Prince Victor would come with reinforcements. The words were good, but Anastasia gave a heartbreaking smile.

“Orabeoni won’t come.”

He wouldn’t come. Victor would probably move to secure the troops in the south. If so, Anastasia’s role was to buy as much time as possible for him.

Chandra didn’t deny Anastasia’s words. However, what if the situation was reversed? Would Anastasia throw Victor away?

It was a meaningless speculation. Anastasia laughed bitterly.

“I’m glad that I sent Felicia to the rear.”

They might have crossed words at Baikal orabeoni’s tea party, but Felicia was Anastasia’s favourite sister. She had placed Felicia at the very rear, so Felicia wouldn’t be swept up in this.

‘Will she try to come rescue me?’

It was a scenario which was possible if it were Felicia. She was a person who behaved emotionally, rather than with her head.

Anastasia recalled Silvan. He would act stupidly if Felicia were in her situation right now. Even if he were alone, Silvan would probably rush to the central fortress to save her.

It was stupid. Even so, he was a good fool. Somehow, Anastasia didn’t hate it.

Anastasia changed her bitter expression back to a cold and elegant smile. She then shook her head and stared at the barbarians beyond the fortress. There were too many of them. The roar of the monsters, heard from afar, tightened a grip around her heart.

However, Anastasia wasn't afraid. If she showed fear, everyone in the fort would fall into greater anxiety and terror.

Dawn would arrive soon.

The battle of the central fortress began.

Chapter 159

Exacerbation #2

Curtis had a fairly large number of troops from the Demon King's Palace stationed there.

Compared to other areas, Curtis had too much rain, so the ground didn't dry out. In contrast to Evian, which was a wasteland, Curtis was a blessed land.

In the western part which had direct contact with the Western Limit Line, the Paran clan was the main axis of the army. The number of clan members reached 1,000, and almost all of them were part of the demon king's army. They were giants, so each one could exert the strength of hundreds of soldiers.

To the south of the Western Limit Line, the lizardmen resided in a huge swamp area which bordered the large forest. Unlike the lizardmen who lived near the Jishuka Mountains, these ones had been loyal to the Demon King's Palace for a significant number of years. The superiority of the Paran clan was great, so the lizardmen were relatively undervalued. However, they possessed excellent courage and outstanding combat skills.

In the eastern part of Curtis, the army consisted mainly of orcs. The orcs occupied a considerable proportion of almost all of Curtis' area, not just the east but the west and south as well. If the Paran clan and lizardmen were important organs, the orcs were the blood which made them function properly.

The forest, where the Gullam hunters were stationed, was the most distant area from the west and east of Curtis, and only a small number of soldiers were placed there. Since it was the rear with a low chance of facing the enemy, only a small unit was needed to patrol and maintain the security.

As the western part of Curtis landed in the hands of the western barbarians, 3rd Prince Victor and Paran chief Berkintox headed south and east, respectively.

Victor's goal was to secure the lizardmen. In a situation where the Paran tribe's

betrayal was evident, he placed more hope in the south, than the east. It was likely the lizardmen, who were usually on bad terms with the Paran clan, wouldn't agree to a rebellion.

As Victor expected, Berkintox hadn't allied with the lizardmen. Thus, Berkintox headed east instead of south. He would use the orcs, who had revolted in the west, to absorb the orcs of the east and turn them into allies. Simultaneously, they would intercept the connection between the Demon King's Palace and Curtis.

It was an urgent night. All of Curtis was rattled by the destruction of the transportation formations.

Berkintox sat on the back of a mighty monster and stared toward the east. The monster resembled a horse but had six legs, and it grew beyond the Western Limit Line. It was a special gift the barbarians had prepared for Berkintox.

Berkintox's life was marked by fighting with the barbarians. He had lived a lifetime as a faithful warrior of the Demon King's Palace.

So, it was no wonder that Anastasia had never imagined the Paran clan's betrayal. In the hundreds of years since the Demon King's Palace had been established, the Paran clan had always been loyal. Many years had passed with no deception.

Moreover, there was no motive for the Paran clan to betray the Demon King's Palace. The western part of Curtis belonged to the Paran clan originally. They had lived on the land and fought the barbarians beyond the limit line before the Demon King's Palace had even been established. They hadn't been forced to join the demon king's army.

The people of the Paran clan weren't as foolish as the various species found throughout the Demon World—Berkintox and his ancestors didn't forget one fact.

The Paran clan was strong, but the Demon King's Palace was stronger. Even if the Paran clan revolted and took Curtis, it would only last for a short time. The Paran clan wouldn't be able to hold on once the Demon King's Palace moved to take Curtis back. It was a fact they felt more strongly due to belonging to the army.

Once again, there was no reason for betrayal as the consequences of the betrayal would be terrible. Why would they incite a rebellion despite knowing this? Anyone who doubted the Paran tribe would have been insane. That's why Anastasia hadn't felt

any doubt, and neither could Victor imagine the betrayal of the Paran clan.

Berkintox made calculations in his head. He figured out the time it would take for the Demon King's Palace to figure out that the transportation formations had been destroyed and the time it would take to dispatch the army.

Then Berkintox concluded that it was enough. He could fight against the Demon King's Palace and win.

It was impossible with just the Paran clan. This was a goal which couldn't be accomplished even if they joined hands with the barbarians. Even if all of the powers in Curtis were gathered, it would just be a dream.

However, Berkintox dreamt of the impossible. He truly thought it was possible.

It was due to the person he'd met. It was thanks to him that Berkintox and the western barbarians could join forces.

His plan, his goal...

The collapse of the Demon King's Palace. It was inevitable that a new order would dominate the Demon World.

Berkintox produced the red energy of War. As an apostle of war, he spread the fires of war.

The night deepened.

The barbarians surrounding the central fortress didn't attack instantly. They just shrieked in an eerie manner all night.

It was a clever act.

There was an order to the barbarians' movements, who seemed disorderly at first sight. They moved in shifts. There was a group which howled to scare the central fortress and a group which rested. The barbarians' behaviour was to hide several things.

First, it was to buy enough time to gather more barbarians. Barbarians were still coming from beyond the Western Limit Line. The barbarians, who had helped Paran tribe take over the other fortresses, were moving to the central fortress.

The second was to harass the central fortress. The barbarians knew there would be no fighting during the night. It was also virtually impossible for the troops stationed at the central fortress to start the battle first.

However, the central fortress didn't know these facts which meant they couldn't rest easily for one moment during the night. Furthermore, staying up all night would cause tension and fatigue which would weaken the army.

Thirdly, night was the time of the nightmares. The barbarians weren't nocturnal. It was daytime, not night, which was familiar to them.

Night was the time of the nightmares. Anastasia and her nightmare troops could exert more power during the night than the day. So, from the barbarians' point of view, it was natural to avoid a night battle. Fighting the enemy at that time, when they were stronger, would be a foolish act which not even a monster would make.

Anastasia discovered all of this, but even if she told them there would be no fighting tonight, the soldiers of the central fortress wouldn't be able to rest. In the end, it was just a guess. Moreover, if soldiers weren't seen on the walls, the barbarians would strike. The barbarians held the initiative in this fight.

Anastasia thought positively. Buying more time wasn't only useful for the barbarians. Although Victor had abandoned Anastasia, she hadn't given up. She would hold on. If she survived for a while, there was still hope.

Anastasia ordered the nightmares to rest and also had the soldiers on the walls sleep in shifts. The nightmares used a sleeping magic, unique to them, for the soldiers who couldn't sleep due to tension and fear.

After climbing up to the top of the walls, Anastasia looked down at the barbarians. According to her estimates, their number exceeded 20,000.

How long could she hold on?

Anastasia didn't calculate it. In the few hours left before the battle started, she prepared as many magic spells as possible.

Then at dawn, the sun rose to signal morning.

The barbarians started to move.

The roar of a monster announced the start of the battle. It was followed by the sound of horns which shook the entire central fortress.

The barbarians were faithful to the basics. There were 20,000~30,000 warriors, so they chose the most effective means of attack when surrounding a fortress. They rushed from every side of the central fortress with shouts which seemed to tear the sky apart.

The walls of the central fortress were thick and high. Even though the Paran clan had an average height of 10 meters, the high walls were at least 30 meters in height. On top of that, soldiers from the demon king's army were present. Although they were lacking, in comparison to the 30,000 enemies, they didn't lose their nerves as they fought bravely.

"Shoot!"

The soldiers fired arrows from the fortress. The barbarians raised their shields above their heads and ran through the heavy rain of arrows. The number of arrows was less than the number of barbarians which were coming from four directions.

The barbarians stuck to the walls. Some were carrying hooks and look ladders recovered from the fortresses near the limit line.

The demon king's troops poured boiling oil and stones down the walls. It was already a situation where they couldn't shoot arrows as the barbarians were climbing up the walls.

Kwang!

There was a roar and the walls shook significantly. It was the sound of a monster,

whose body was around 20 meters long, banging against the walls. The monster's head was very big and hard.

The soldiers were confused at the existence of such a monster. They couldn't imagine how to deal with it. Originally, the Paran clan would be the ones to deal with such monsters. So, it was doubtful the attacks from common monsters would work.

However, it wasn't just the monsters striking the walls which made things difficult. Barbarians riding on the backs of wyverns covered the sky. Some fired energy shots toward the walls, while others descended and picked up soldiers.

In this terrible situation, the only thing they could believe in was magic. The 200 nightmares dispatched to Curtis, along with Anastasia, poured out magic toward the barbarians.

However, it wasn't efficient. The mental magic, which was the best specialty of the nightmares, was being blocked. The red aura around the barbarians meant they didn't fall to the lure of the nightmares. The nightmares had no choice but to respond with attack spells.

Anastasia stood on the western wall, which was receiving the heaviest attacks. She wore armour and searched the ground and sky with cold eyes.

She was one of the three children closest to becoming the demon king, and the position of demon king wasn't something she could get just on the strength of her forces.

Anastasia sprinkled lightning into the sky, and there was a loud sound like a thunderstorm. White lightning flashed, and a huge lightning bolt struck a wyvern. The wyvern crashed to the ground without screaming, and the lightning continued. It bounced and hit another wyvern.

Anastasia didn't watch the chain of deaths. As lightning struck, huge flames emerged from her hands. The barrier of fire swept from the ground to the top of the wall, burning the barbarians hanging on the wall mercilessly.

There were cheers of joy from the soldiers of the demon king. Instead of cheering, Anastasia caught her breath. She created a new lightning chain after the last chain broke off at the fifth wyvern.

As expected from the demon king's child. She was a ray of hope to the soldiers. Actius, the king of the western barbarians who was watching the sight from afar, smiled happily.

Powerful magic was required to knock down a wyvern with one block. How many times could she use that magic? Although she was a child of the demon king, she was only a woman in her early 20s. Even if her magical accomplishments were excellent, she clearly had limits.

Actius gave a command.

‘Continue.’

He didn't care about the number of sacrifices as long as he could take care of the demon king's beautiful daughter.

It wasn't that the barbarians had no fear of death. It was common for them to hesitate if they were going to be killed by a terrible magic spell. Anastasia knew this fact, which was why she was using some extreme magic despite it being unreasonable.

Yet something unimaginable was taking place. Upon the order, the barbarians rushed forward without any fear. They offered their lives generously. It was due to the red aura of war. Unlike those who were paralyzed by reason, they absorbed the madness of war and didn't fear death.

The attacks were repeated, and numerous barbarians were killed by the brilliant magic. However, the wave of barbarians never stopped.

As they continued to rush forward, the magic of the nightmares became weaker. The unreasonable magic use ate at the spirit of some of the nightmares. Additionally, using such strong magic in succession drained their magic power.

Anastasia still looked strong, but it was only a matter of time. The interval at which she used magic became slightly longer, and the number of soldiers who turned to wielding a sword, instead of magic, at the barbarians gradually increased.

Actius smiled leisurely at the sight as he watched Anastasia eagerly.

Some time passed by.

The soldiers on the walls were exhausted. One minute felt like a long time, and the endless waves of barbarians exhausted the spirit of the demon king's army.

Sweat was flowing down Anastasia's body. She had killed over 20 wyverns, but there were still more in the sky. Five barbarians riding wyverns sneered at Anastasia.

Hooks were caught on the walls. The barbarians wrapped in red energy were climbing the walls quickly. Ironically, the western wall, which contained Anastasia and the strongest defense, would be the first to fall.

Anastasia gritted her teeth. Even if her mental magic didn't work, she couldn't let it end this way. She couldn't tolerate the fact that she couldn't even last a day.

She squeezed out her magic power. Ignoring the mental fatigue, Anastasia drank potions to restore her magic power. Finally, she aimed Fire Arrow at the head of a barbarian which had reached the top of the wall.

Once again, her magic didn't betray her. The Fire Arrow didn't stop at piercing the barbarian's head and burnt it as well. The barbarian screamed and fell from the wall.

At that moment, Anastasia's vision turned red. It was a temporary disability caused by excessive magic power usage.

She would recover in a few seconds at most, but that time was fatal on a battlefield. As Anastasia's eyes and ears were covered for a few seconds, many things happened. A few barbarians climbed over the wall and wielded their weapons at the weary soldiers.

Then a monster struck the wall. The earth shook, and the wyverns screamed in the sky. Anastasia staggered. Once she regained her sight, she raised her head. At that moment, she barely managed to repress a knee-jerk scream.

A wyvern was right in front of her. The sharp claws were heading toward her like a hawk grabbing prey. She had to use magic. At the very least, she should move her body and avoid it. Anastasia moved desperately, letting out random bursts of magic power while rolling across the ground.

Kiaack!

The wyvern flew and avoided the explosion of magic power. Anastasia rolled across the ground and got up hurriedly. Then a barbarian approached and swung a club at Anastasia's head. Anastasia's aide, Chandra, screamed, and Anastasia twisted her body. After avoiding the club, Anastasia grabbed the back of the barbarian and released magic power, taking him down.

Anastasia panted heavily before straightening her posture. Chandra sighed with relief, but at that moment, the previous wyvern discovered Anastasia again and flew forward with a wide open mouth.

It was an energy shot. Anastasia had a gut feeling she wouldn't be able to avoid it this time. Despair and fear were seen in her eyes for the first time.

She had to move—move and avoid this attack somehow!

Kwakakakakang!

There was a loud boom. Anastasia flinched, but then she saw it.

A huge pillar of light was sweeping across the wyvern. The pillar of light shone an intense green. It couldn't be compared to the energy shot from the wyvern.

Anastasia staggered, then suddenly, there was a strong arm wrapped around her waist. A dark blue fog had spread around her. Shortly after this happened, Anastasia realized she was in someone's arms.

Anastasia, who thought of Baikal for a moment, blinked, staring dumbly at the figure before her. She was so surprised that it took a moment to recall his name.

“Sh-utra?”

Instead of answering, his sharp eyes stared at the battlefield. Anastasia was once again confused. Over the past few months, Shutra had gained some brilliant achievements. At the court gatherings, he had shown an appearance different from his old self. However, she couldn't help feeling surprised.

Did he look like this? No, was this truly Shutra?

He was tall, his arms were firm, and aura and magic power were overflowing from him.

Anastasia recovered herself. As she stayed in Shutra's arms, she restored her reasoning as much as possible.

Shutra was here. Had the reinforcements arrived? Did Felicia lead the Gullam here?

Joy soared inside her, but at the same time, she was confused.

It was impossible—the distance was too far. It was simply impossible for Felicia and reinforcements to reach here.

Anastasia looked at the sky. It was still full of barbarians riding on wyverns. At that moment, Anastasia understood.

Shutra was alone. Shutra was the only one who had reached the central fortress.

In-gong released Anastasia from his arms. As her legs sagged, Anastasia stared at In-gong blankly. She couldn't understand it.

'Why has Shutra come to this place?

'What can he do alone?'

In-gong looked at Anastasia. It seemed like she had unintentionally voiced that last thought.

In-gong smiled instead of answering. He activated Dragon Blood and his quad-core at the same time.

Earth Quaker gave an angry roar, and a tremendous power rose from In-gong's body. It was a power which seemed like it could overwhelm the surroundings just by standing there. It was like an answer to her question of what he could do alone.

Anastasia opened her mouth unconsciously. Then In-gong turned around. He watched the energy of war which covered the entire barbarian camp and triggered the power of Conquest.

“Below the King’s Flag.”

In-gong grabbed the white flag.

The power of Conquest spread with every step In-gong took.

The fight of the Conquest Knight had begun.

Chapter 160

Overwhelming

Zephyr was the protagonist of the Demon World in Knight Saga.

He was a strong warrior and magician, but he never stood alone on the battlefield. As a commander, Zephyr ruled the battlefield with his loyal subordinates and soldiers.

In-gong stood on the wall and looked down at the battlefield. His line of sight was filled with barbarians; there were over ten thousand of them. This wasn't like the army of eastern barbarians he'd fought in Takar.

Their numbers were several times that, and the army was at least three times stronger. In-gong couldn't fight using Zephyr's method, as he lacked the forces to fight against a big army.

Then what should he do? In-gong took a deep breath. There was another protagonist in Knight Saga.

The protagonist of the Human World was the warrior, Locke. Locke wasn't a prince. He had trustworthy companions whom he shared life and death with, but he didn't have a loyal army of thousands who would die for him. Locke was a leader—a mighty warrior who brought hope to a desperate battlefield.

'It is irrational.'

Locke's style of fighting was different from Zephyr's, so he was always at a disadvantage in a fight.

He was the brave warrior who advanced toward the Demon King's Palace. After passing through tens of thousands of soldiers to reach the demon king, Locke finally became the hero who killed the demon king.

Locke's method was different from Zephyr's, and In-gong had to fight using it. In-gong would become a one man army who would reverse the situation. However, Locke was

strong and had learnt Knight Saga's SS rank technique, the Warrior's Sword.

'I don't know.'

In-gong let out a long breath. The SS ranked Divine Sura Authority created a flow of aura which was breathtaking. He had three equipment from the elder dragon, and Amita had tuned them so well that they were incomparable to normal S rank equipment.

'Master.'

Green Wind became a breeze which wrapped around In-gong's whole body. She was just like Beatrice was to Locke.

Truth be told, it didn't matter if she was lacking in support when compared to Beatrice.

Green Wind only had the strength of the wind. However, unlike Beatrice, she was always with In-gong. If he had to choose between Beatrice and Green Wind, In-gong would choose Green Wind without any hesitation.

Moreover, it wasn't just Green Wind who accompanied In-gong.

'Conquer.'

From the depths of his soul, the voice of the white woman with red and blue eyes was heard. The power of Conquest continued to increase.

In-gong felt a sharp sensation on his lips, and divine sparks rose over Amita's newly created Dragon Scale Greaves. It was the final flame—the woman who took In-gong's first kiss. For reference, the second one had been Green Wind. Somehow, it didn't feel like he had been kissed twice, but a kiss was still a kiss.

In-gong laughed and made a fist, then he concentrated aura and magic power on Earth Quaker.

Anastasia had said, 'What can you do alone?' Her words were right. It was impossible for In-gong to overthrow an army alone. However, In-gong didn't have to take out the big army alone.

“Carack.”

Using Night Watch’s power, In-gong hovered in the air slightly and used Call. Carack was a capable aide and knew why In-gong had called him. Instead of asking questions, he walked over to the disconcerted Anastasia. Carack’s role was to act as Anastasia’s escort. He would be able to protect her from blind attacks on the battlefield.

In-gong shifted his gaze toward the sky and the ground, prioritizing them both.

It was definitely far from Zephyr’s battle style. Moreover, Zephyr wouldn’t be here in the first place. Anastasia was a competitor for the throne. So, from Zephyr’s point of view, it would be best to just let her die.

However, In-gong was here. It wasn’t because Felicia had begged him to save Anastasia. Nor had he calculated that saving her would improve their relationship and gain a political favour. In-gong wanted things to change. He wanted to destroy the ending of Knight Saga where all of the demon king’s children died.

‘I like this about Master.’

Green Wind said suddenly, as though she had read his heart. In-gong smiled and separated White Eagle from Black Eagle. The two of them shone with a green light and started to revolve around In-gong.

“Let’s go, Green Wind.”

‘Let’s go, Master.’

No further preparation was needed, and In-gong rose up into the air. The power of Conquest spread out, focusing everyone’s attention on him.

‘Like a warrior!’

In-gong flew forward like a flash toward the closest wyvern. The dark blue Night Watch made a rough trajectory in the wind.

Kwakakakang!

There was a huge roar. In-gong accelerated past the wyvern instantly, with White

Eagle and Black Eagle breaking its neck. As red blood splashed out from the wyvern, In-gong was already flying toward the second wyvern. There were continuous roars, and In-gong accelerated past each wyvern. It wasn't long before the seventh wyvern fell to the ground.

The loud sounds in the sky, along with the falling wyverns, were enough to make a strong impression. The number of eyes staring at In-gong increased. There were still a few wyverns left in the sky, but In-gong's next goal was the ground.

While soaring in the sky, In-gong changed direction suddenly. He dived toward the ground and stretched out his right hand, grabbing Ascalon from his inventory. He then unfolded the Dragon Bane—Ascalon's super special move!

In-gong appeared as a lightning bolt as the charging lance struck the neck of a huge monster. The monster couldn't endure the horrific shock and collapsed instantly. Astonishment and shock ensued as the monster cried out with pain.

As Dragon Bane was stronger against dragons, the monster wasn't killed with one blow.

However, In-gong didn't mind. The important thing wasn't to stop the monster's breath—it was enough to show that the monster could be neutralized by a single strike.

More gazes gathered on him. The battles on all sides of the fortress subsided, and as all eyes stared at him, In-gong inhaled deeply. He placed Ascalon back in his inventory, while he climbed onto the neck of the monster!

'Black Specter!'

A dark blue fog spread out. The flapping sounds of hundreds of wings caught everyone's ears. The dark fog started from the neck of the monster, crossing more than 100 meters to reach the main force of the barbarians.

It was a fearsome sight. The black fog descended and swallowed everything in its path. Despite the flapping wings, loud screams could be heard clearly. Then the sound of the wings stopped. The dark fog dissipated, and a white light emerged.

In-gong raised the king's flag once again, then he spread out the power of Conquest.

The red energy of war, which had been covering the barbarians, was destroyed. There were hundreds of barbarians at In-gong's feet, but none of them were able to shoot their bows or throw their spears.

In-gong had overwhelmed them temporarily. The whole battlefield looked at him, and he stared out at what was before him.

He looked at Actius, the king of the western barbarians. In-gong already knew what to do next. He wasn't a warrior who led through fighting like Karatus, the king of the eastern barbarians. Actius was a cowardly ruler. Therefore, he was always away from the main area of his first attack.

"Bedora!"

A monster standing beside Actius, opened its mouth at Actius' command.

The monster was a horn drake, a land type dragon. It was a monster whose body was 30 meters long, and it ran on the ground with four feet without any wings. A fearsome power was focused on the giant horn on the forehead, and a pillar of light three meters in diameter shot out from its mouth. It was a fearsome breath incomparable to that of the wyverns'.

In-gong glared at it. Instead of using Blink, he combined White Eagle and Black Eagle before him. Following Night Watch's super special move, Black Specter, he used White Eagle's super special move this time.

'Absolute Area!'

The moment the red pillar hit White Eagle, the sky turned red. The pillar split into hundreds and thousands of pieces, alternating their direction toward the sky and the ground.

Then someone screamed. This was just the beginning.

Kwang! Kwang! Kwang! Kwang! Kwang!

A heavy rain of light poured down from the sky. Confusion and terror spread every time a ray of light hit the ground.

Actius panicked and so did the horn drake, who shot out the breath. However, In-gong didn't wait for either of them. The dark fog exploded once again under the torrent of light. Blink—In-gong used Blink three times in succession to break through the zone of heavy firepower. He then drew back his right fist as he moved forward.

His target wasn't Actius. In-gong focused all the power of his quad-core on one point. Then he used one attack. Following Night Watch and White Eagle, it was Earth Quaker's super special move!

'True Destruction!'

In-gong struck the neck and chest of the horn drake. The power of destruction sprang out and crushed the horn drake's body.

Kwaaaaaang!

It was like thunder had struck the ground. The power of destruction, which combined both aura and magic power, seemed to break both the sky and the earth. The horn drake didn't scream. Its head simply fell to the ground, and once the huge body collapsed, it caused the earth to shake.

Dust and dirt rose up. Surprised by the sound of thunder near him, Actius gasped. He couldn't comprehend the situation and was paralyzed by what happened. It seemed like a terrible nightmare. The other barbarians were the same. It was pointless to see how many had died and how many were left. The only thing that remained in their heads was the power of the destruction.

There was a calm in the storm. Once again, the black fog exploded in the midst of the tension, anxiety and fear. With the last Blink, In-gong landed on the ground in front of Actius.

In-gong was tired as well. He had used four successive super special moves, but he couldn't stop here. He had to finish it properly.

In-gong gathered his remaining aura and magic power as he stared at Actius. He took out various scrolls he'd received from Felicia from his inventory as well. Wind, fire and lightning exploded in all directions, causing a disruption in the surrounding area.

Actius was overwhelmed by In-gong and moved quickly. Instead of rushing toward In-

gong, he started to escape urgently. He had already witnessed In-gong's movements, so he didn't stop.

It was as In-gong thought. In Knight Saga, Actius would escape if there was any sign of danger. It happened when Actius was convinced he couldn't keep fighting or win the battle. The barbarians around Actius panicked. They fell into confusion and didn't run toward In-gong, nor did they escape with Actius.

Instead of attacking the barbarians, In-gong burnt the banner of war which was next to Actius. The flag played a central role in supplying energy to the battlefield, so the effect was indeed enormous. The aura of war covering the whole battlefield was removed, causing further confusion.

That wasn't all. Green Wind appeared next to In-gong and shouted toward the sky,

"The barbarian king has fled!"

"Fled!"

"Fled!"

The amplified voice spread over the sky of the battlefield.

There were those who couldn't see the entire battlefield, so it was easy to be deceived. Moreover, the spirit of war which had been controlling the barbarians' spirits had disappeared. It wasn't possible for the barbarians to maintain a sense of calm.

The ranks of the main body, who had actually witnessed Actius fleeing, collapsed. They were also witnesses to In-gong's overwhelming ability, so they chose to escape instead of fighting him. As dozens of barbarians ran away, the flow quickly grew to hundreds and then thousands. Those at the left and right wings, which were distant from the center, were confused by the movements of the center. It was the same for those on top of the fortress.

Anastasia blinked with a dumbfounded expression. She couldn't believe everything that had happened before her eyes. At that moment, Carack shouted from in front of Anastasia,

"Princess! Now!"

Anastasia's eyes widened, and she immediately understood the situation. It was now the time to give support from the rear. The barbarians' escape was just a temporary phenomenon. In order to spread that phenomenon to all the barbarians, military power was necessary.

Anastasia pulled out a potion and drank it. After recovering her magic power forcibly, she gave a command she had never imagined would be shouted today.

“Open the gates! Support Shutra!”

The whole battlefield began to transform.

The barbarians, who had lost the energy of war, were no longer immune to spirit magic. The result of Anastasia's long term spirit magic was really frightening. The completely deceived wyverns then poured energy shots toward the barbarians. The individual barbarians were not controlling the monsters—the nightmares were. Complicated commands were not needed. Simple control was enough to make the monsters go crazy.

There were thousands of troops in the central fortress. It was unreasonable to pursue the barbarians who outnumbered them. However, the barbarians had suffered considerable damage while escaping. There were those who were trampled by their own allies or killed by a raging monster. Anastasia pretended to pursue them aggressively. This meant that the barbarians couldn't stop moving. She didn't drive the barbarians in one direction but scattered them in every direction.

In-gong looked at the mini-map while sitting on White Eagle, up in the air. In-gong let out an involuntary sigh of relief. There was still some aura and magic power remaining, but his physical and mental strength were completely exhausted. So, he was really glad.

‘As expected from Anastasia.’

It was a timely response. Moreover, her ability to dismantle the barbarians was really like art. She was really capable.

In-gong closed his eyes. He wanted to fall asleep, but this place was the battlefield. Moreover, In-gong wasn't alone right now.

"Master, did I do well before? I mimicked what the lycanthropes did at Takar."

In-gong stroked Green Wind's head as she sat next to him. In-gong laughed as he recalled Green Wind spreading the news that the barbarian king had escaped.

"Yes, well done."

He took off Earth Quaker and stroked her head with his bare hands. Green Wind looked at him with a pleased expression and said,

"Master."

"What is it?"

"You were really cool today."

Green Wind spoke honestly, and the effect was powerful. In-gong shifted his gaze to avoid Green Wind's eyes.

Then the voice of a woman was heard in In-gong's ears.

[You have led a desperate battle to victory.]
[Title: Great Hero has been acquired.]
[Your level has risen.]

In-gong smiled with satisfaction.

Chapter 161

Overwhelming #2

Level 38...

In-gong looked at the level displayed in his status window with a satisfied expression.

‘I will soon be level 40.’

In Knight saga, something special happened every time his level went up by 10. The usual thing would be raising the level of a special skill which couldn’t be raised in normal ways, or acquiring a new special skill.

Even among the other levels, level 40 was a special axis.

‘Occupation upgrade, or an additional occupation.’

Both of them were like their names suggested. An occupation upgrade was to shift an existing occupation into a higher position, or to gain an additional occupation which wouldn’t normally be possible.

At level 40, he was able to choose only one of them. However, both options made him stronger, not weaker.

Upgrading was the most conservative choice. There was no big change in the way he would use his abilities, since this was just a shift to a higher position within the existing occupation; upgrading would only improve its effects.

On the other hand, In-gong had to consider gaining an additional occupation as well. Synergy could be created in different ways, depending on which occupations could be combined with his existing occupation.

‘Now that my occupation is Protagonist... what would happen if I upgrade Protagonist? Would something like Fake Protagonist come out?’

In-gong laughed and closed his status window. He didn't know what additional occupations would emerge, so there was no point in worrying about it right now. He hummed lightly before feeling a gaze on him again. Green Wind was obviously staring at In-gong.

"Master."

"Huh?"

In-gong said as he stroked Green Wind's head. Instead of her usual expression, she blinked a few times before aiming her lips at In-gong's cheeks. It was a kiss on the cheek, with a duration too short to be something special. However, In-gong's eyes widened with surprise.

"Greenie?"

He looked at Green Wind with a face which seemed to be asking, 'What are you doing?'

"I suddenly wanted to do that. I told you before, but Master looks cool today. Does Master dislike it?"

She once again kissed him on the cheek. It seemed to be an extension of the normal affection which Green Wind aimed at In-gong, but In-gong couldn't help flinching. Unlike the hugging, he wasn't used to this yet.

"Master, you are cute as well as cool. I think that Master is really good."

Green Wind laughed and hugged In-gong's arm. A heavy weight was weighing down on his arms. At that moment...

"What are you doing? What, is the hero playing around now?"

It was a rude voice, but it wasn't unwelcome. In-gong turned to see Carack on a big black horse. In-gong cried out reflexively,

"No? By the way, what about Anastasia noona?"

Carack was supposed to be Anastasia's escort. So, it was somewhat strange that Carack was now alone. Carack laughed like it wasn't a big deal.

“Princess will come soon. It seems like she wants to thank Prince. I told her I would go ahead and give you the news.”

When In-gong looked at the mini-map, the barbarians were running away. Rather than chasing the barbarians aggressively, the forces of the central fortress celebrated the end of the battle or healed the wounded.

“I think you are even cooler today. General Vandal will be surprised. The nightmares were surprised. My shoulders were raised with pride.”

Carack had been watching In-gong since time with the Red Lightning tribe until now. So, his face was full with strong emotions.

“I didn’t do that much.

In-gong replied as he shrugged, while Green Wind hugged his arm again.

“Yes, Orc. Master is cool. You should continue to praise him.”

In these cases, Carack and Green Wind fit well together. Carack laughed and knocked on his chest.

“Prince was very cool today. I am proud to be Prince’s aide.”

“Yes, you were awesome.”

Carack didn’t show his pride through his actions like Green Wind but expressed it through words.

Some more time passed by, and as he talked with Carack, another person approached—Anastasia. A few nightmares, including her aide Chandra, were following her. It seemed they had headed straight to In-gong’s location after finishing the battle.

In-gong looked at Anastasia in silence after Green Wind lost her solid form. Anastasia was riding a unicorn which only a pure woman could ride, despite being a succubus. Speaking of which, Anastasia had been fairly quiet in Knight Saga as well. She wore a white dress with low exposure and gave off an elegant impression.

‘If I just look at the clothing, Felicia is more like a succubus.’

Even now, Anastasia was wearing solid armour. Her hair was tied up, so it wouldn’t interfere with fighting, and she didn’t have any feminine embellishments. Nevertheless, she was very beautiful. Despite her blunt facial expression, she was the daughter of Titania Nekrion and a succubus.

Once she was within talking distance, Anastasia jumped down from the unicorn and stood before him. There was a gentle smile on her face as she spoke,

“Thank you for your help. I was able to escape from a difficult situation today thanks to you.”

Unlike Felicia and Caitlin, In-gong felt a sense of distance from her. However, her words weren’t untrue. In-gong looked into Anastasia’s eyes. He didn’t have the talent to read things just by looking, like the sword duke or demon king, but In-gong could see some things. Just like Felicia and Caitlin, Anastasia had a slightly different look from the version of her in Knight Saga.

‘Well, the situation between the children of the demon king isn’t bad yet.’

It was only after the winter of Year 515 that she had become really wicked in Knight Saga. All the negative emotions between the children of the demon king, such as rivalry, hatred, and a sense of crisis, had been stirred up by Richard and Zephyr.

However, right now, it was Year 512. The children of the demon king didn’t hate each other yet. In-gong had confirmed this fact at Baikal’s tea party. Although Anastasia had argued with Felicia at the tea party, there wasn’t any sense of enmity or rivalry. Her attitude towards Felicia was more because she was skeptical about the reason why Felicia had chosen someone else.

‘I can make a difference now.’

Fortunately, Anastasia didn’t see them as enemies yet. In-gong had also appeared out of nowhere to save her, and Anastasia wasn’t a shameless woman. Moreover, this was an emergency situation. Rather than compete, they had to combine strengths. Her tone was a bit hard, but her eyes and voice were soft, so In-gong felt satisfied. He smiled at her and said,

"I am glad to help. It looks like I barely made it in time. Felicia noona was very worried... I was as well."

Anastasia was somewhat confused by In-gong's worry, but that only lasted for a moment. She soon smiled with joy, and her smile was more sincere than before.

"I think I understand a little bit about why Felicia chose you."

Anastasia murmured in a small voice. She asked In-gong,

"It might not be suitable right after the battle, but I need to talk to you because it is urgent. Shutra, what are your plans for the future?"

Although the barbarians surrounding the central fortress had been driven out, the other fortresses were still in the hands of the enemy. As time went by, new enemies would surround the central fortress.

After taking a deep breath, In-gong made eye contact with Anastasia. His height had grown, and he was almost at eye level with her.

"I've thought about it roughly. Before that, I want to ask you one thing. Where is Victor hyung now?"

Victor and Anastasia had always been together, just like how Chris and Caitlin were one set and Felicia and Silvan were another set. However, he couldn't find Victor anywhere on the battlefield.

Anastasia responded to In-gong's question in a quiet tone.

"Victor orabeoni went on a mission outside the fortress. He is probably heading south now to rally the lizardmen."

Her expression and voice showed no signs of resentment for Victor who had come to rescue her. No, maybe she was just hiding it inwardly. Anastasia changed the topic.

"Shutra, you might be expecting this, but it is likely to be the work of the Paran clan's chief, Berkintox. Do you know anything about his current movements?"

“It isn’t clear, so he is probably going east. Unlike the south, the eastern troops are more likely to join Berkintox.”

The fact that almost all the fortresses in the west had been taken over meant Berkintox had at least an agreement with the orcs. Most of the forces in the east were orcs, so there was a good chance they would cooperate with Berkintox, along with the western orcs.

In-gong recalled what he knew about Berkintox. The Paran clan chief was a careful and thoughtful person, so it was unexpected that he would rebel while knowing about the greatness of the Demon King’s Palace.

‘Perhaps the cause is the War Knight.’

It was just like how the War Knight had reached out to the eastern barbarians. This led In-gong to think the reason for Berkintox’s rebellion was the War Knight. Perhaps Berkintox had become an apostle of war like the eastern barbarian king. In-gong put off thinking about the War Knight. The important thing right now was to escape from this isolation.

“As you can see from today, the western barbarian king, Actius, is cowardly. As long as I jump onto the battlefield, he will want to give up. Furthermore, he won’t reduce the number of troops around him. It is a good situation for us.”

It was one of the reasons why he didn’t bother pursuing Actius. His escape would buy In-gong more time and opportunities.

“But even so, it won’t buy us that much time. It is just that the barbarians won’t surround the central fortress.”

In-gong’s fingers drew a picture in the air. Soon, they saw a map made of green magic power in the air.

Anastasia looked at the map and said,

“Shutra, are you planning to abandon this fortress?”

“It is a strategic decision. Is Noona willing to do so?”

Anastasia nodded silently. If the barbarians hadn't created an encirclement, she would have escaped.

"Felicia noona is heading to the north with a unit of Gullams. We will move to the 12th base using the shortest distance. We can join Felicia noona there and work with Victor."

In-gong drew a few new lines in the air and asked Anastasia,

"Can the wounded people move?"

"It is possible if we don't worry about saving recovery magic potions and magic. Some wyverns and monsters were captured this time, so we can move somehow. Rather, the problem is the movement speed. We may be stopped before we get there."

The distance to the 12th base wasn't short. Additionally, it wouldn't take long for the news about today to spread around. So, there was a chance they would get caught from the back or the side while running toward the 12th base.

It wasn't just Anastasia. The nightmares expressed concern as well. However, Carack laughed as he judged the distance from the map.

"Once again, faster than the wind."

"Faster than the wind?"

Anastasia asked In-gong what it meant. She seemed to think it was the name of an operation.

In-gong shrugged and asked a question instead of answering,

"Anastasia noona, are you good at recovery magic?"

"Recovery magic?"

"Recovery magic."

In-gong grinned, and Anastasia nodded as she felt an ominous feeling.

Chapter 162

Overwhelming #3

The news that Actius had been routed didn't make its way to many of the fortresses and bases near the central fortress. This was because Actius prioritized fleeing to a safe area, rather than spreading what happened. The barbarians, who occupied each fortress and base, weren't informed by Actius but by the forces which scattered in every direction.

It had already been a day since the battle of the central fortress. The Paran clan chief, Berkintox, arrived at the ninth stronghold, the largest warehouse in eastern Curtis, before hearing the news about Actius.

At first, he didn't believe it. No, it was unbelievable. It was an impossible situation. The troops had been overwhelming. Moreover, thanks to the energy of war, the nightmares' specialty of mental magic could be ignored. It was simply impossible for the barbarians to be defeated, although the battle might take longer than expected.

'How?

'How on earth?'

Actius was clearly a coward who only thought of his own safety. However, he wasn't stupid. Rather, he was cunning and clever. He would fight to win and needed to be strong to have become the barbarian king. Yet he had been defeated in a single day? It had been a siege and yet he had been routed? What the hell had happened?

That wasn't the only thing he couldn't understand. There were some unbelievable stories mixed in.

In the midst of a siege, a white light had appeared and massacred the wyverns in an instant. A white shield and black shield defeated the monsters attacking the gates. A man in a dark blue cloth fell across the large army and killed a horn drake with one punch. They didn't know what happened, but a rain of fire had poured down from the sky.

The first story was somewhat understandable, but the next two weren't. The monsters brought by the western barbarians were gigantic monsters. One of those monsters had been taken down with one blow? Additionally, the one who had done it was a normal species and not a giant?

Berkintox instantly thought of the five captains of the Demon King's Palace. He had only encountered Gallehed, the leader of the suras, but that was enough. It was possible for a captain of the Demon King's Palace. In that case, all the stories spreading around wouldn't be a problem. No, he would be able to believe them even more.

Berkintox shook his head. A captain couldn't appear at the central fortress. They were somewhere else, not at Curtis. It was clear the stories were exaggerated as it was very common for those defeated to inflate the enemy's power and rationalize their defeat.

'Yes, it's common.'

However, it wasn't just a rationalization. On a battlefield, there were many factors which could cause the soldiers to reject the situation, such as: an uneasy psychology state; the shock of being defeated; the fear of death; and so on.

'But even so...'

Berkintox didn't jump to any conclusions. Even if the process was exaggerated, it was clear Actius had lost. There might be a mixture of intermediate level generals at the enemy base with a combination powerful enough to match a senior general.

It was an unexpected variable. Did Anastasia have a strong succubus as a supporter?

Berkintox laughed suddenly.

As expected from Anastasia... she had hidden a trump card.

Berkintox looked down at the large map the Paran clan used. He was currently in the ninth orc stronghold, so he wanted to review the current situation.

Actius had retreated to the north. Victor was headed southwest to contact the lizardmen, and Berkintox was currently in the east. 6th Princess Felicia Doomblade and 9th Prince Shutra Ignus were at the southernmost tip of Curtis. Perhaps their goal

was to join the lizardmen in the south-west.

‘And there is Anastasia.’

Berkintox made a decision. The original plan had been to leave the task of defeating Victor to Actius, while Berkintox would head south to isolate Victor by defeating the Gullams. However, he now had to do something else.

Berkintox would head west personally. After defeating Anastasia, he would lead the barbarians and seize all of Curtis. There was no reason to delay the decision. Berkintox stood up instantly.

Felicia looked toward the northwest. It was the direction In-gong had headed in.

She had been marching for two days with the Gullam hunters, including Galang. Their destination was the 12th base which In-gong had designated as the meeting point. There was no way she could hear news from the north. Therefore, Felicia looked at the north with uneasy eyes several times while using recovery magic on the Gullams.

‘He is okay.’

Felicia touched her forehead slowly. She was able to know this because she was a member of the King’s Knights. In-gong was currently safe. This also meant that the central fortress was still standing.

‘It is really ridiculous.’

He had gone alone to save Anastasia unni and the central fortress. It was even more absurd that Felicia believed In-gong could do it.

‘He just needs to get there in time. Then he will do it. This time as well, Shutra will show a wonderful appearance.’

Felicia took deep breaths as she calmed herself, but she couldn’t help laughing.

‘It isn’t the same without Shutra.’

Felicia's main task was to use recovery magic whenever the soldiers were exhausted, in order to maintain their marching during the day and night. However, it was much better than when they had been in Evian. She didn't have to worry about being exhausted due to overusing her magic.

"Shutra is really too much."

It was really exciting every time. Felicia muttered with a smile as she looked toward the north. As she recalled something, a different worry formed in her mind.

Anastasia and Shutra, the heads of two factions...

'Are they still doing well?'

Felicia felt an ominous foreboding.

"Faster than the wind!"

"Faster!"

"Faster!"

As they became accustomed to the slogan, the central fortress defenders shouted it repeatedly as they ran frantically.

It had been a day since the battle. As soon as the wounded soldiers were recovered, In-gong and Anastasia left the central fortress while leading 3,000 defenders.

Due to the vast majority being infantry, the march was forced to slow down. However, In-gong didn't tolerate it. Green Wind's Protection of the Wind lightened the legs of the central fortress defenders. In-gong's flag of light enhanced their physical abilities as well.

After the first preparations, In-gong ordered the central fortress defenders to follow him.

Then In-gong continued. He ran forward, but it wasn't a frenzied rush. Regardless of

the magic and periodic rests, there was a limitation to their physical strength. However, In-gong didn't allow the defenders of the central fortress to collapse.

Anastasia was located in the middle of the pack and used recovery magic periodically. Thanks to that, the central fortress' defense troops didn't collapse from exhaustion, but she was mentally exhausted as she ran.

The nightmares used a magic spell which paralyzed the reasoning of the central fortress defenders. Of course, the nightmares had to run endlessly as well. The effect of the nightmares' magic was effective.

The fortresses and bases had received the news about the rout late and were unable to respond to the sudden movements of the central fortress defenders. They only blocked the road after the situation was already over, but it wasn't their fault. The central fortress defenders just had an abnormally fast speed. Thus, the central fortress defenders were able to pass through the fortresses without experiencing any battles.

"Take a short break."

"Break!"

"Break!"

Once In-gong stopped in place, the nearby soldiers shouted and spread the command. The 3,000 soldiers sat down without hesitation.

In-gong looked at the mini-map. They had almost left the north-west area of Curtis. There was now only a little bit left. Of course, it was hard to feel at ease as it was obvious the enemies would plan something after adapting to the unusual speed of the central fortress defenders.

In-gong looked at the mini-map continuously as he moved from the front of the procession to the middle with Carack. It was to see Anastasia.

'Surely, she hasn't fainted.'

In-gong remembered Felicia's and Daphne's stats and hurried. Then he involuntarily let out a cry of admiration,

“Oh!”

Unlike his expectations, Anastasia had a fairly straight posture. She was sweating, but she wasn't lying on the floor like Felicia or Daphne had done.

“Are you okay?”

Anastasia blinked at In-gong after hearing his words. Her expression was somewhat weaker than usual.

“You—do you normally make Felicia do this?”

Her voice was relatively restrained, but it was mixed with resentment, irritation and nausea. Instead of answering, In-gong just laughed. It was at that moment that In-gong heard Green Wind's voice in his ears.

‘Master, there are enemies.’

The voice came from White Eagle which was floating in the sky. In-gong hurriedly shared his gaze with Green Wind while opening the mini-map. Like Green Wind said, a group of people were running this way.

There was approximately 500 of them. It wasn't a large number, but the problem was that they were armed cavalry, and they were designed to grab the ankles of the infantry troops.

If they delayed too long here, they might be surrounded by enemies on all sides. After confirming the movement path of the cavalry, In-gong closed the mini-map and shifted his gaze. It seemed like there was a dusty place in the distance.

“Shutra?”

“There is a pursuit.”

After hearing In-gong's words, Anastasia hurriedly turned in the direction he was looking at, and her eyes shone white as she used magic.

“They are cavalry. There are approximately five or six hundred of them?”

Anastasia frowned as she finished talking. After seeing the type and number of enemies, she thought the same thing as In-gong. Despite their physical strength having been maintained by magic, the central fortress defenders were mentally exhausted. They had no problem running forward, but fighting was difficult.

“I’ll stay here and buy some time. Noona should lead the troops forward.”

Anastasia’s eyes widened at In-gong’s words. In-gong shrugged and continued speaking,

“It is impossible to defeat them, but I can buy some time. I will fight in moderation and join you guys later.”

He had White Eagle and Black Eagle to protect him. If he mixed and matched techniques properly, he would be able to prevent any troops from passing by In-gong.

‘Wah, I have truly grown.’

He was thinking about stopping 500 cavalry alone. Although the scale was smaller than yesterday’s, they might rush toward the 3,000 troops, so he couldn’t choose the option of flying over the enemy heads like he had done yesterday. It was dangerous and hard work.

After In-gong’s words, Anastasia thought for a moment before making a determined expression. Then she replied in a quiet voice,

“No, I’ll stop them with you. I am the one responsible for the forces of the central fortress. It is unreasonable to make Shutra do this.”

It was a problem associated with her sense of honour and responsibility. The nightmares beside Anastasia gazed at her with an admiring expression. but In-gong was different.

“Well, yes. Then I’ll leave it to Noona. Let’s go, Carack.”

In-gong said lightly before turning around. Anastasia became confused. She didn’t think that In-gong would agree like this.

It was unreasonable for Anastasia alone to block 500 cavalry. She would be able to use

various mental magic to get rid of them, but she was exhausted right now. Moreover, it was highly likely that mental spells wouldn't work if they were surrounded with the red energy of war like the barbarians.

While Anastasia was panicking, Carack stared at In-gong and said in a loud voice,

"Prince."

In-gong turned around at the call. He shrugged and handed the flag of light to Carack.

"Carack, please guide the defenders.

"Don't worry."

Carack grinned as he raised the flag of light. Due to the effects of the king's flag, the defenders of the central fortress started to stand up.

In-gong looked at Anastasia and said,

"Did you think I was really going to leave it to Noona?"

Anastasia pouted at the playful question. Her expression was restrained, but he could feel the emotions behind it.

'Looking at this, Anastasia is also cute.'

In Knight Saga, he had just thought of her as a bad girl.

'Zephyr and Richard ruined her.'

In-gong moved to the rear of the procession with Anastasia. Anastasia looked down at In-gong from her unicorn and asked bluntly,

"Let me ask again, is it normally like this with Felicia and Caitlin?"

"Um, a little more severe?"

The two people had to experience this repeatedly.

Anastasia's eyes widened at In-gong's answer. She looked cute, but now wasn't the time to flirt. In-gong equipped Earth Quaker on his right arm, and his gaze sharpened.

"They're coming."

Under Carack's guidance, the central fortress defenders started to spring again. Their speed seemed slow enough for the cavalry to catch up with them. Anastasia drank a potion while staring at the cavalry. Anastasia's nightmares, who followed her, were ready to fight.

"Shutra, let's talk later."

Anastasia said, and In-gong nodded. They charged toward the cavalry.

Chapter 163

Overwhelming #4

Swords and bows were both weapons which could be used in a fight, but their usage was different. It wasn't just the sword and bow. There were various types which existed in the huge category of swords, and there were many ways to use them.

Strength was the same. Vandal was strong, and among the senior generals, he was the one with the strongest brute force. It was probably possible for him to take out a monster with one blow. However, he couldn't attack dozens of people at the same time. So, it was impossible for Vandal to confront an army alone.

Among the senior generals, there was a man called, Vi Carulo. He had the nickname of 'One-man Army' due to his actions being enough to rival an army.

Vi Carulo was a powerful necromancer. If the number of bodies was enough, then he could create a majestic undead legion anytime and anywhere. He didn't distinguish between friend or foe when raising the corpses, and it didn't matter to him as long as he could overwhelm the other side. Additionally, he preferred massacres since that would lead to more corpses.

This meant Vi Carulo was able to fight an army alone, but it didn't mean he was definitely stronger than Vandal. In fact, Vandal would be the victor if they competed in a one-on-one fight.

Anastasia's strength was different from In-gong's. She was a magician as well as a born enslaver.

Anastasia's unicorn, Windwalker, charged forward. She wasn't charging toward the cavalry but passing by them.

The area which the 500 cavalry occupied was more than she had imagined. Even if Anastasia was a brilliant magician, it was impossible to strike such a large area all at the same time. Moreover, her purpose wasn't to exterminate the cavalry as it was enough just to cause confusion and break the will of the enemy. This was the same as

what In-gong had done at the central fortress.

The orcs and kobolds, which made up the cavalry, weren't surrounded by a red aura. Due to this, Anastasia was able to utilize her specialty. After witnessing Anastasia's charge, the cavalry changed to spears or swords, instead of a bow, in order to attack Anastasia as she rushed past. There was the sound of yelling, and 500 cavalry charged, causing the earth to shake.

Anastasia chanted a spell while looking straight at the cavalry. Then her purple eyes flashed, and something unexpected occurred.

"Hihihing!"

"Hihing!"

As Anastasia watched on, the horses reared up abruptly. They also shook their bodies roughly to try and drop their owners. At most, it only happened to 20 of them. However, it was important since they were on the outskirts. As the front suddenly stopped moving, the formation of the cavalry became a mess. There were those who fell off when bumping into the riders in front of them or from trying to stop quickly.

Anastasia continued to use her magic to enchant other horses. The nightmares running alongside her poured all sorts of attack spells toward the orcs on the ground.

Anastasia's unicorn was uniquely intelligent. Windwalker moved lightly and maintained a proper distance from the cavalry. He seemed to walk around the cavalry in circles. However, there was a problem with Anastasia. She couldn't rest after a big battle and had a hard time running all night. Moreover, it wasn't just running. Her body and mind were extremely exhausted from using recovery magic several times.

Anastasia felt dizzy while charging forward, and as she frowned from the pain, dozens of cavalry members shot arrows at her. There also were a few who came rushing toward her. Anastasia gritted her teeth. The nightmares acted to block the arrows, while Windwalker ran harder than before.

Then In-gong plunged forward. White Eagle and Black Eagle created a force field which fended off attacks from In-gong. Five fireballs flew from his fingertips toward the cavalry which was running toward him and exploded.

The soldiers and horses collapsed, but there were 500 cavalry members, so there were still many remaining. A group of them rushed over the fallen ones. In order to surround the party, the cavalry members moved in different directions and aimed arrows and firebombs.

Explosions occurred everywhere. Windwalker jumped over the explosions and avoided the cavalry. However, then Windwalker shook his head because his back had become lighter.

Anastasia's eyes widened. She was in the air, and In-gong's arm was wrapped around her waist. The moment an explosion occurred in front of Windwalker, In-gong had grabbed Anastasia.

The confused Windwalker continued to run around the cavalry. The nightmares also ran along with Windwalker, slowing down the speed of the cavalry using magic. Anastasia confirmed the distance between the party and the cavalry before turning to In-gong. His face was close to hers because In-gong was holding her with one arm.

"Are you okay?"

In-gong smiled lightly, and Anastasia frowned. She glanced at In-gong's arm around her waist and said,

"Shutra, you shouldn't grab the waist of a virtuous woman at any time."

Even if he hadn't grabbed her, she would have escaped thanks to Windwalker.

'Yes, Master. Master was wrong. You should grab my waist.'

Green Wind whispered to In-gong. Instead of asking what she was talking about, he just restored his breathing and didn't speak. Rather, it was more important to drop Anastasia off somewhere.

"Shutra?"

Anastasia asked him suddenly. Instead of responding, In-gong continued flying toward Windwalker. After putting Anastasia back on Windwalker, he reversed the position. Green Wind whispered again,

‘Master, the orc in red armour seems to be the leader. He is shouting orders.’

In-gong agreed. After a glance at Anastasia, he flew forward using the power of Night Watch.

The cavalry had split in two and were surrounding Anastasia. In-gong moved his gaze away from her. There was no time to deal with all 500 cavalry members, so the best tactic was to strike the leader.

White Eagle and Black Eagle revolved around In-gong and blocked the arrows. In-gong shot toward the orc in red armour.

After losing their leader, the cavalry opted to escape instead of fight. The damage to the cavalry was quite large. A few horses had fallen to the ground due to Anastasia, while others were killed or injured through direct combat.

In-gong sighed with relief as the cavalry ran away.

By using Divine Sura Authority while being protected by White Eagle and Black Eagle, In-gong had great power. However, he couldn’t handle hundreds of enemies. The super special moves had a limited number of daily uses, so he was glad they had given up early

After restoring his breathing, In-gong looked at Anastasia. Instead of rejoicing in the victory, she seemed to be enchanting one of the wounded enemies who seemed to be in a decent condition. She was either trying to interrogate the enemy on the spot or enchanting him to ride with them.

“Noona, we need to hurry.”

Anastasia nodded as In-gong rode over on White Eagle. They had to hurry in order to catch up with the central fortress defenders. With In-gong at the forefront on White Eagle, the party ran forward again.

Some time passed by. They found the central fortress defenders where they were running, and In-gong moved to the front of the line on White Eagle. While holding the flag of light, Carack shouted,

“Prince!”

Carack’s stamina and endurance were comparable to In-gong’s. So, his face and voice were filled with welcome instead of fatigue. However, the soldiers around them were different. Everyone’s expressions showed that they were suffering. Below the King’s Flag and Protection of the Wind weren’t enough. In order to move faster than the wind, recovery magic was necessary.

“Anastasia noona! Please!”

In-gong shouted as Anastasia barely reached the front. Anastasia’s expression became momentarily tearful, but she soon restored her expression. She repeatedly cast the recovery magic over the 3,000 central fortress defenders.

“Um, I am exhausted. Prince is really too much.”

After the frantic sprint, the central fortress defenders were able to reach the 12th base. However, the price was great. The central fortress defenders seemed like they had their souls sucked out, while Anastasia was lying on the back of her unicorn. She was sweating and gasping for breath.

“I had a feeling this would happen.”

Felicia, who had arrived at the 12th base first, said while staring at Anastasia. Anastasia was an excellent magician in many ways, but this was probably the first time she had collapsed due to magic power exhaustion.

Felicia stared at her with sympathy and then gazed at In-gong with narrowed eyes. In-gong just grinned and pretended not to know.

“I’m here, Felicia noona. Were you worried?”

The bright smile made the most of his gandharva beauty, so Felicia couldn’t help laughing.

“You aren’t hurt anywhere?”

“I’m fine.”

In-gong knocked against his chest, and Felicia sighed with relief. She had been very worried about In-gong. So, she was glad that he had returned safely.

Felicia covered her face with a fan and said,

“Let’s settle this situation first. We need to greet the troops of the 12th base.”

The 3,000 soldiers were collapsed on the ground. In-gong nodded at Felicia’s words and gazed a little further away. The lizardman Makkulpin, the leader of the 12th base, was running this way.

Berkintox, who arrived at the central fortress, felt more confusion than anger.

The central fortress was empty. He understood up to here. Berkintox had been expecting it to some extent. There was no reason for Anastasia to be sitting in the central fortress when Actius had loosened the encirclement.

However, he hadn’t thought it would be so empty. It wasn’t just the troops of the central fortress... The warehouse was completely empty. There was no evidence of the food, weapons or other goods which would have been stored in the central fortress.

Surely, they hadn’t brought the items with them while running away? It was crazy. Emptying a warehouse wasn’t easy. The central fortress was the supply base for the fortresses near the Western Limit Line, so it stockpiled a tremendous quantity of supplies. Just taking them out of the warehouse and packing them would take a full day.

There was a problem even after the warehouse was cleared. As the amount of supplies being carried increased, the movement speed would slow down. Wasn’t it better to lighten their body as much as possible in order to run away?

Yet surprisingly, Anastasia had done it. Moreover, they had escaped the western part of Curtis in just one day, so Berkintox wondered about what type of magic had been used.

Every one of the fortresses, which had missed Anastasia, said the same thing through the communicator.

Their movement speed had been too fast; the marching speed of the infantry hadn't been normal. Therefore, they hadn't been able to block the infantry properly due to their unexpected speed.

Now, Berkintox could only laugh. 4th Princess Anastasia Nekrion...

He had known she was capable, but he hadn't expected this. She far surpassed his expectations.

Berkintox controlled his emotions. It was just a change in order, but this way, he could bring all the Paran clan members together.

'I can use this time as well.'

The Paran clan warriors were already gathering from all over the place, and the number of Hwarin members who had pledged allegiance personally was over 100.

Berkintox gave orders to each fortress and base in the western region.

"Hit the 12th base. Smash it so that not one trace remains and show our strength to all of Curtis."

The troops of the western area all obeyed Berkintox's command. Except for the barbarians led by Actius, all the forces of the west started moving.

Chapter 164

Giants

Anastasia woke up.

It was warm. She felt a bit fuzzy, but it wasn't bad.

'Soft.'

The sheet touching her back and the blanket covering her were soft, and the clothes she wore weren't sweaty or rough.

"Are you awake?"

Anastasia moved her eyes as a voice was heard from next to her. Instead of her aide Chandra, she saw the red eyes of a beautiful dark elf.

"Felicia."

Anastasia sighed and closed her eyes; she remembered. She was amazed she had managed to keep using magic until they somehow arrived at the 12th base. Felicia, sitting next to the bed on a chair, pressed gently against Anastasia's shoulder when Anastasia tried to raise her upper body. Felicia shook her head.

"Just lie down. You are still a bit dizzy. You used magic until you were exhausted, so the aftereffects will last for a while. Aren't you tired due to the travelling? Your waist and hips will hurt a lot."

Riding a mount for a long time was more difficult than one would have imagined.

Anastasia opened her mouth unconsciously.

"You are familiar with it."

"Well, I did faint several times in the same manner as Unni. Don't worry too much. You

will be fine after a day of sleep. Have faith in the people with experience.”

Felicia winked, and Anastasia gave a small sigh.

“That is even worse.”

“Huh?”

Instead of explaining, Anastasia looked around the room. It was a large but neatly furnished room. There were candles lit up in various places of the room, warming the air.

“How long was I collapsed for?”

“Around half a day or so? It is now night. Relax and rest a little more.”

Felicia said in a pleasant tone as Anastasia was exhausted right now, and the situation was different from Baikal’s tea party where there was an exchange of nerves. Anastasia laughed at this aspect of Felicia. Indeed, it was due to this that she valued Felicia. In fact, she had been a little upset at the last tea party. Felicia had suddenly pulled her feet out from Anastasia’s faction and attached them to Shutra. So, she had annoyed Felicia a little bit more persistently than usual.

Anastasia let out a long sigh. She turned her gaze back to Felicia’s face and said,

“Shutra—he was great.”

“Hum hum, our Shutra really is great.”

There was no need to wait for the reaction. Felicia spoke while covering her face with her fan, but her long ears twitched. She sounded really proud. Anastasia laughed brightly.

“I thought you changed paths due to future aspirations, but that isn’t it. It is because Felicia has another reason.”

It would be a lie to say it wasn’t for political calculations, but there seemed to be an emotional aspect involved.

“Well, somehow, I feel slightly bad.”

Felicia didn't seem to worry too much about what Anastasia thought. However, Anastasia buried both her anger and sadness and said,

“Shutra saved the central fortress in a really cool manner.”

“Really?”

It was the right bait for Felicia, and so Anastasia kept a watch on Felicia's ears.

“He has a lot of mysterious tricks and many powerful magic items. The way he took all the supplies in the central fortress... He didn't tell me how, but it was amazing.”

“Hrmm. That is Shutra's secret. Please note that I knew before Caitlin. Shutra told me first.”

Her fan was covering her face, but her eyes could still be seen. It was clear that she was smiling from ear to ear.

“Why are you so smug over there?”

Felicia coughed instead of answering, and Anastasia laughed again. This time, she managed to sit up and said,

“Call Chandra. I'll get dressed and meet up with Shutra and the leader here.”

Anastasia was currently wearing only a thin negligee, which probably belonged to Felicia. It was impossible for Anastasia to meet anyone while she was dressed like this.

“Shouldn't you rest a little longer?”

Felicia asked again with worry on her lovely face, but Anastasia shook her head.

“Shutra and the leader will wait. But Berkintox won't give us that time.”

Unlike In-gong or Felicia, Anastasia knew Berkintox. Although she never noticed his betrayal, she knew how competent he was.

“I understand. Wait a bit.”

Felicia stood up instantly.

“The north and west of Curtis are under the influence of the traitor, Berkintox. The eastern part seems to be close to the west. In fact, except for the southern area around the forest, almost all of Curtis has been taken.”

Makkulpin, the lizardman and head of the 12th base, pointed to a large map of the battlefield spread out on the table. The story was roughly as expected. As Anastasia frowned, Makkulpin looked over at her and said,

“Prince Victor is currently rallying the lizardmen at the swamp. He will be delighted to hear that Princess is safe.”

“Yes, I am also glad that Orabeoni is safe.”

Anastasia said in a dry tone, and Makkulpin shifted his gaze like he had made a mistake. Felicia, who guessed the general situation, sighed and changed the topic.

“I think half of the Hwarin clan has joined Berkintox. It seems liked the Hwarin clan were the ones who destroyed the transportation formations in the first place.”

The Hwarin clan were giants who wandered all over Curtis. If they struck simultaneously, they could attack all of Curtis at the same time.

“And the Gullam clan?”

“They are with us, but their numbers aren’t as high as the Paran clan’s. 20 Gullam hunters have come with us here.”

Felicia shrugged and replied to Anastasia’s question. There were few hunters left in the village because many hunters had gone to hunt far away. Anastasia swallowed her saliva. She turned to Makkulpin and asked,

“Anyway, is there any news about Artman?”

“No, it is likely that he has joined Berkintox.”

Artman was a magician and a senior general of the Demon King’s Palace. He had been sent to Curtis last year and seemed to have joined Berkintox during that year. What had Berkintox used to convince Artman? In the first place, why had Berkintox decided to rebel against the Demon King’s Palace? However, it didn’t matter—Anastasia had to look at the situation right before her. Then she spoke to everyone in a quiet voice,

“If I were Berkintox, I would come here. He will probably come with all of his troops, and he’ll try not to repeat the same mistakes.”

It was clear that Actius’ defeat had made a strong impression on Berkintox. So, he would give priority to this side over Victor.

“There isn’t enough time to wait for support from the Demon King’s Palace.”

All the bases with long range communicators were under Berkintox’s control. Although the Demon King’s Palace might have noticed the destruction of the transportation formations, it was possible they didn’t know the exact situation regarding Artman and Berkintox. The Demon King’s Palace would believe in the senior general, Artman, and the Paran clan which had been around for hundreds of years.

Anastasia closed her eyes. If Felicia and Makkulpin were in this position, they would have considered a full retreat. However, it wasn’t just the two of them in this position. Anastasia looked before her with a sense of competitiveness and asked the other child of the demon king about how to break the crisis.

“Shutra, what would you do?”

The enemies were many and strong. The 100 Paran clan members alone were hard. Additionally, the barbarians and forces of Curtis followed Berkintox as well.

However, Anastasia had a voice which was mixed with anticipation. Shutra had managed to defeat 30,000 people at the central fortress.

In-gong folded his arms slowly, then he answered Anastasia’s question.

Berkintox rushed forward.

He didn't waste any time in the central fortress. The 10th base was the one closest to the 12th base.

Actius, who had fled to the north, didn't move himself but sent new barbarians to the west of Curtis. The barbarians rode on the back of quick monsters and hastened to the 10th base.

Artman, the senior general of the Demon King's Palace, headed for the 10th base as well. He was a powerful magician who had led his magic squad and the Hwarins, and destroyed Curtis' entire transportation formation system.

After leaving the central fortress and reaching the 10th base, Berkintox joined Artman. He waited one day for the quick barbarians to reach the 10th base. Then he rushed forward once again in order to not give Anastasia time.

One day passed by. The Paran clan and orcs joined 7,000 barbarians and reached the 12th base.

The walls of the 12th base weren't high. All the bases and fortresses of Curtis were built to deal with barbarians, not giants. The walls of the central fortress had been an unusual case. The height of the walls of the 12th base was approximately 10 meters. It was a height which felt like a neighbour's wall to the Paran clan which averaged 10 meters in height.

Additionally, there was Artman, who had octopus-like hair, slender limbs and seven tentacles. He could feel the magic power of the nightmares on his purple skin. It was clear 4th Princess Anastasia was at the 12th base.

"There isn't just one succubus. There is also the smell of the magic power of a dark elf. It is clear that 6th Princess Felicia is also present."

Artman delivered the message to Berkintox through magic. Berkintox focused his eyes on the soldiers along the walls of the 12th base. Indeed, Anastasia could be seen among the soldiers. She had her hair tied up and was wearing white armour as always.

'It is a little surprising.'

Although he urged the troops to move, Berkintox also kept in mind the possibility that the 12th base would be empty. It was because Anastasia wasn't the type to engage in a reckless fight. There was no siege here, unlike at the central fortress, so she could choose to escape. Anastasia being here meant that she thought there was a chance of victory.

Berkintox made a decision. No matter what Anastasia had prepared, he would break through it using force. Berkintox rode a monster and gauged the distance from the 12th base. It was a long distance which arrows couldn't reach, but the giants were five times the size of normal species. Berkintox raised his sword up high and distributed the aura of war to the orcs, barbarians and Paran clan warriors.

The atmosphere heated up, and a shout broke out among the soldiers:

"Charge!"

"Charge!"

"Charge!"

The united shouts shook the heavens and the earth as the Paran clan warriors rose up from the ground. It was truly spectacular. 100 giants stepped on the earth, so the sound was truly terrific. The surging momentum seemed to stab the sky.

The troops of the 12th base felt a fear of death just by looking at the rush of the giants. It seemed helpless for someone with the ordinary strength of a person. The leader of the 12th base, Makkulpin, couldn't breathe. Even the Gullam hunters, who were giants like the Paran tribe, felt fearful and gulped.

The passage of time couldn't be felt properly, feeling both short and long. Anastasia formed tight fists, while Felicia bit her lip where she was beside Anastasia.

The distance narrowed down, and the sound of the Paran clan became louder as they neared. Death... The troops couldn't help gulping. It was like they were going to be swept away by a tsunami!

The moment the soldiers of the 12th base thought this. Anastasia stared up at the sky, and Felicia shouted loudly as if to shake off the fear.

“Shutra!”

It was time. This was a moment they had calculated for in advance.

The Gullam hunters, including Galang, stared up at the sky with respect. Artman looked up, and Berkintox also sensed something. High above the sky, where no one paid attention to due to focusing on the Paran clan... There was something diving down... pouring down from the heavens!

Kwaaaaaang!

There was a huge roar as it tore through the atmosphere, and lightning struck among the rushing Paran warriors.

It was a huge sword. A giant sword struck the ground and stood there proudly, like it had always been there.

Berkintox saw it. Then the Paran clan warriors and everyone else stopped moving. They turned reflexively toward the direction of the sword.

It was instinct—an irresistible command engraved in their souls. The Giant King’s Sword... And the person before the sword...

In-gong stood afloat above the Giant King’s Sword and had one hand placed on it. Due to the dragon heart, he was emanating the strong power of a dragon. At this moment, something happened. The Giant King’s Sword began to glow, and a white aura spread out! The red aura which covered the bodies of the Paran warriors was peeled off at once, and the Paran clan warriors could no longer resist. They fell to their knees instantly, bowing before the Giant King’s Sword. The Paran clan warriors worshipped the great dragon warrior.

“Drakon Kechatulla!”

“Drakon Kechatulla!”

Inside the 12th base, the Gullam hunters shouted, and that call soon spread. The Paran clan warriors opened their mouths and cried out the name of the great dragon warrior.

“Drakon Kechatulla!”

“Drakon Kechatulla!”

It was the name of the great warrior who led the giants and fought against the evil red serpent god. Everyone on the battlefield was amazed. The sight of 100 giants on their knees was like the scene from a myth.

However, it wasn't a myth. This was a reality. Therefore, there were conflicting emotions. The soldiers of the 12th base were amazed, while the orcs and barbarians were overwhelmed with surprise and fear.

In-gong's gaze moved to a distant place. Despite being confronted with the Giant King's Sword, there was only one giant who didn't shout the name of the dragon warrior. It was Berkintox, the apostle of war.

The Giant King's Sword shone once again, and In-gong roared on the battlefield.

‘Conquer!’

The white woman shouted from the depths of In-gong's soul as the equipment of the elder dragons cried out loudly. Berkintox was confused, but In-gong didn't wait for him to understand. The Conquest Knight rushed toward the Apostle of War.

Chapter 165

Giants #2

The Paran clan and Gullam clan shared the same roots. Just like how the Gullams worshipped Drakon Kechatulla, the great dragon warrior, the Paran clan also knew about the great warrior who confronted the serpent god.

The 100 members of the Paran clan repeated the chant, and the blood of the giant king, which had been diluted and weakened as the years passed, was revealed in this moment.

This wasn't an old, made up story. It was a part of history, and it was true. The Paran clan were on their knees and felt embarrassed about not being able to move, but they were convinced. These were the instincts the giants shared with the Giant King's Sword. However, it wasn't just the Gullam and Paran tribe members on the battlefield. The Hwarin warriors knelt down as well. Then the wandering warriors, fighters at the limit line and hunters of the forest yelled simultaneously,

"Drakon Kechatulla!"

"Drakon Kechatulla!"

Unlike the Paran clan running in the lead, the Hwarin warriors were among the soldiers. So, the orcs and barbarians next to them fell into a greater state of confusion.

Artman, a senior general of the Demon King's palace, was amazed at the power emanating from the Giant King's Sword. He realized the power was an ancient force that was thousands of years old. Artman opened his mouth in order to shout, but as the three giant clans continued to chant, the gazes of everyone on the battlefield naturally turned to one place.

Berkintox was looking at the same place like everyone else. He was both an apostle of a war and a giant, so he felt many things. His instincts clashed with the power which had been given to him.

The dragon warrior was back. It was the same person as the one who caused the miracle in the battle at the central fortress. He was at the end of the Giant King's Sword. The Paran clan warriors were currently on their knees and under the influence of the Giant King's Sword. It was only a matter of time until they would attack the barbarians under the name of the dragon warrior.

"Drakon Kechatulla!"

Berkintox exclaimed, but his call was different from that of the other giants. He resisted the power of domination emanating from the Giant King's Sword because he was an apostle of war. Putting hatred and anger in his cry, he rushed toward In-gong. The red energy of war soared from his body, and Berkintox's huge body swelled even further.

Then Artman's command spread throughout the battlefield. His magic power awoke the minds of the shaking orcs and barbarians.

"Attack the base!"

Artman had also seen that it was only a matter of time before they would be attacked. However, retreating now was the worst possible thing they could do. They had to reverse the situation before the Paran clan warriors were taken away. He needed to induce a melee. Additionally, Berkintox had to cut down the dragon warrior!

The orcs and barbarians ran among the giants. Even without the Paran clan and Hwarin clan, there were more than 10,000 troops. Moreover, the walls of the 12th base weren't that high or solid. They could destroy them even without the power of the giants!

"Go!"

Artman shouted again with his magic power and shifted his gaze. At the center of the battlefield, a red aura was just about to clash with a white one.

"Berkintox!"

Artman shouted. At the same time, the red energy of war rose from him. Berkintox wasn't the only apostle of war on this battlefield.

In-gong felt the strong power of war, but he didn't have time to glance around. Instead, he looked straight ahead. The force of Berkintox, who was rushing with a sword and shield, was truly terrifying.

The moment Berkintox swung his sword, In-gong turned into a dark mist and used Blink to jump over Berkintox's sword. He aimed his fist at Berkintox's chin. Explosive power rushed out. Berkintox's head turned to the side, but he didn't fall down. As he was pushed back, he tried to strike at In-gong with the shield on his left arm.

In-gong clung to Berkintox. As Berkintox twisted around, his left arm hit the place where In-gong had just been floating, and divine sparks poured out as In-gong struck Berkintox's neck.

Bbaek!

There was a huge sound from the blow. Berkintox couldn't withstand this attack; his knees shook, and his posture collapsed. In-gong's strikes didn't end there. He didn't have the slightest intention of delaying the time. White Eagle and Black Eagle struck Berkintox's chest. Rather than a stab, it was closer to pushing away using a force field.

Berkintox fell to the ground and felt a violent anger. The body of a giant, along with the added power of war, meant that he wasn't hurt much, but he had already allowed three attacks. In-gong knew it as well. That's why he moved even more. His right arm reached out and grasped at the air. Once again, he crossed the space with a dark fog.

Pepeng!

It was a relatively short distance, so the sound of the fog explosion rang out. In-gong exited the dark fog at Berkintox's chest, aiming his right hand at it. However, he wasn't aiming with his fist as he was now holding Skull Crusher!

A sound which shook the heavens and earth exploded!

Kwang!

Skull Crusher's super special move was a terrible blow without concentrated aura, so only half the power emerged, but that was sufficient. The breastplate Berkintox was wearing became dented, and a groan of pain emerged from Berkintox's mouth. In-gong then released Skull Crusher, and upon returning it to his inventory, he moved his

right and left hands. Each hand was using a different power.

A fireball emerged from In-gong's right hand and exploded in front of Berintox's face. The power wasn't great, but it was enough to prolong Berkintox's pain. As such, Berkintox couldn't breathe properly.

"Kuaaaak!"

Berkintox struggled as In-gong flew upwards vertically. Berkintox followed In-gong with his eyes, and he hurried to get up, shouting with pain and anger. Then there was a scream from Artman,

"Berkintox!"

Artman wasn't only looking at Berkintox; he was looking a little further ahead. In-gong gathered strength in his left hand. As a result, something moved across the space like an explosion.

Peeok!

The Giant King's Sword flew like a dagger and pierced Berkintox's chest. However, In-gong hadn't moved it with just Telekinesis. The Giant King's Sword itself had the power to fly.

It wasn't a deep strike, but it pierced the armour, and Berkintox flinched back. Then In-gong used his third Blink. It wasn't toward Berkintox but toward the front of the handle of the Giant King's Sword. Berkintox instantly realized what In-gong was going to do, but there was no time to stop it. His red, bloodshot eyes stared as In-gong pulled back his fist, aiming it at the handle of the Giant King's Sword stuck in Berkintox's chest.

'Gigantic Piston!'

It was like knocking a nail with a hammer. The white aura exploded, pushing the Giant King's Sword deeper into Berkintox's chest. The tip of the Giant King's Sword emerged steadily from Berkintox's back.

"Cough!"

Berkintox coughed up blood, while In-gong reached out toward the Giant King's Sword. Instead of pulling the sword out of Berkintox's chest, he called it back into his inventory. The Giant King's Sword disappeared instantly, and blood rose from Berkintox's chest as the wound lost its stopper.

It was a massive blow. Berkintox was now unable to keep himself steady. Instead of pursuing Berkintox, In-gong added the power of the dragon and Conquest to White Eagle. As soon as the Conquest Coat of Arms emerged on White Eagle's surface, White Eagle accelerated and pierced Berkintox's injury. Then a white and green light emerged from it as it carried out In-gong's command faithfully.

Kwakakang!

White Eagle and Black Eagle were separated, and they entered Berkintox's chest, generating a green force field. Berkintox's heart and blood vessels were destroyed! Finally, Berkintox collapsed. The life of the best warrior on the Western Limit Line was shattered, and the red energy of War was consumed by the power of Conquest.

"Noohm!"

Then Artman used his seven tentacles to prepare seven magic spells simultaneously. In-gong turned toward Artman and shouted,

"Felicia!"

Felicia responded to Call and crossed the space. As she appeared before In-gong in the air, she let out a scream reflexively,

"Kyak?!"

Felicia had been standing on a firm wall only to suddenly appear in the air. However, she didn't fall. In-gong stretched out his right arm and wrapped around Felicia's waist firmly. Felicia barely maintained her posture as she chanted a spell without any signs of resentment. This was just before Artman's magic was completed. No, it wasn't an exaggeration to say that a few individual spells had already been completed.

Felicia tore a scroll, which Anastasia had spent all night making for this one moment.

It was a multi-counter spell! This was an object prepared in order to snipe Artman.

The moment the scroll was torn, seven magic spells were triggered.

Artman's magic was countered. The magic, which was just about to be completed, exploded. The individual spells, which had already been completed, ran away from Artman's influence. The strong curses, which had been aimed at In-gong, covered Artman.

Artman vomited from the pain. He was a senior general, and he had used his mighty magic to bring disaster to the battlefield. However, he couldn't do that now. The first button had been broken. The Giant King's Sword had made him too impatient, and Berkintox's crisis had also forced him to act hastily.

The power of the two princesses played a role here. Felicia, a powerful magician, used the surprise scroll created by Anastasia, who was known as a monster in magic. No matter how senior the general was, it was no use if Artman couldn't use his talent.

Felicia continued with another spell, and the white Conquest Coat of Arms appeared on Felicia's forehead. She used a simple yet powerful magic.

"Silence!"

It was silencing magic.

After Anastasia's spell destroyed the opponent's magic, Felicia prepared a spell which would stop the opponent's magic itself. Artman was a more powerful magician than Felicia, so it was difficult for her to use Silence on him. The duration was short, and there was a serious penalty on Felicia, which prevented her from using another spell while it was still active.

However, it didn't matter. Felicia wasn't the only one there!

Pepepeng!

Dark blue fog exploded in rapid succession. In-gong used Blink twice in a row and aimed his left hand. His right hand was holding Felicia, as his left hand aimed toward Artman's heart.

There was no way that Artman, a magician, could endure In-gong's brute force. Some of the amulets he wore to protect his body were broken. Artman staggered back as his

tentacles moved. He tried to attack In-gong, but this time, Felicia moved. She had prepared many things with Anastasia in order to repel Artman. Once In-gong broke the amulets, she stretched out her arm from within In-gong's arms and pulled the trigger of a metal device attached to her right arm.

Arrows were fired at close range into Artman's chest, and the poison covering the arrowheads had a fatal effect. Artman was weakened by the curses he had prepared himself and was no longer able to endure them.

Then In-gong struck Artman's neck. The dwarf long sword in his hand flashed, and Artman's head rolled onto the ground.

[Your level has risen.]

The woman's voice was heard in his head. 'Level 39.' Level 40, the special level, had not been reached yet. However, the woman's voice continued,

[After taking down three apostles of war, your understanding of the apostles has grown.]

[The power of Protagonist Body is activated.]

[The power of Conquest is activated.]

Experience and understanding... As a result, he was able to use it.

[The level of The King's Knights has risen.]

[The level of Call has risen.]

[The level of Conquest Knight has risen.]

[Conquest Knight, Apostle Appointment Lv1 has been learnt.]

Apostle Appointment... An apostle of Conquest!

"Shutra?"

Felicia looked at In-gong. Instead of answering, In-gong held on tighter to her waist. He escaped from the soldiers around Artman and rose up into the sky.

‘Master?’

Green Wind whispered in In-gong’s ears. Instead of explaining, In-gong just smiled. Then he looked at the battlefield from a high position. As he looked at the 100 Paran clan warriors, the orcs and barbarians were rushing to attack the base.

“Let’s finish this fight.”

In-gong reached out into the air and took out the Giant King’s Sword from his inventory once again.

Chapter 166

Giants #3

Helveti, one of the Paran clan warriors, was gripped by fear. However, it wasn't because he was overwhelmed by the fear of the battlefield. His body wasn't listening, but it was different from being tired or unable to move properly. Helveti knelt down without knowing it. As the coldness of the ground touched his knees, his mouth opened,

“Drakon Kechatulla!”

He was surprised by the voice which emerged from his body, and there was a deep emotion in his heart. Helveti was scared. It felt like his spirit as well as his body was being taken over by something.

He moved his gaze desperately. That was the only part of his body he could move freely. Unfortunately, he couldn't see behind him. However, if he could, Helveti would see the huge sword flying at a fearsome speed like a thunderbolt.

What was going on? There was a big roar from behind him. Shortly afterwards, the power dominating his whole body weakened, and his heart sank down in his chest.

Helveti stood up immediately, and the same was true for the surrounding Paran clan. They looked back urgently to check the situation. Helveti was shocked. Berkintox, the leader of the Paran clan who had been believed to be an invincible warrior, had collapsed with a big hole in his chest.

The orcs and barbarians in the alliance were also baffled. Many of them were rushing toward the 12th base without knowing the situation, but the ones nearby were staring at Berkintox in horror. Helveti blinked several times in disbelief before looking around for answers. He then saw Belovaki, a veteran and strong warrior of the Paran clan.

‘Follow his words. He will give commands.’

The moment that Helveti thought this...

“Up!”

“Up!”

Someone shouted. The thunderbolt struck again. A huge sword descended from the sky and struck into the ground. Helveti immediately knew what would happen after.

“Drakon Kechatulla!”

Helveti knelt down in the direction of the sword and shouted loudly. The same was true for the other Paran warriors, including Belovaki.

“It works extremely well.”

In-gong muttered as he watched the Giant King’s Sword on the ground and the Paran clan kneeling down again. The feeling of dominance was better than before because they were disturbed by Berkintox’s death.

“Shutra! My posture!”

At that moment, Felicia’s voice was heard. Despite In-gong’s arm around her waist, she felt some uneasiness. In-gong turned to Felicia and nodded. He lifted the lightweight Felicia and raised his left arm to her legs in order to put her into a sideways stance. This was the so-called princess holding position.

‘Felicia is a real princess.’

While he was thinking this, Felicia was surprised by his sudden movement and hugged In-gong’s neck hurriedly. Then Green Wind’s voice was heard. It wasn’t a small whisper in his ear, but a great call.

“Berkintox is dead!”

“Artman is dead!”

“My master has defeated the two traitors!”

The voice from the sky enveloped the earth. Unlike Green Wind’s usual voice, it was a very sacred and majestic voice, like the voice of a god from heaven. It was definitely a

performance. The orcs and barbarians were shaken, and the soldiers and Gullan hunters on the walls of the 12th base didn't miss the chance to respond to Green Wind's call.

"Berkintox is dead!"

"The Paran clan have succumbed!"

"Hooray, Your Highness!"

"Repel the traitors!"

The emerging cries quickly consolidated into one voice, and the momentum of the rushing troops was truly broken. The orcs and barbarians panicked and couldn't hit the 12th base.

'Master, how is it? Did I do well?'

Green Wind's normal voice was heard as she asked for praise. In-gong nodded and looked back toward the base. He couldn't fight with Felicia in his arms, so he had to return her to the wall.

'It would be nice if there was a reverse of Call... Something like return.'

As In-gong thought this, he flew diagonally toward the 12th base at a fast speed. In-gong felt the joy of riding a roller coaster, but Felicia swallowed her scream and hugged In-gong's neck tighter. Regardless of whether they were enjoying it or not, the two of them were able to reach the wall at a fast speed. The soldiers on the walls looked up at In-gong and cheered, with Carack and Delia among them.

"Prince!"

Carack exclaimed as he looked at In-gong. In-gong stopped around 10 meters above the wall and shouted with a pleased face,

"Carack! Receive this!"

'Receive?'

Delia blinked and Felicia, who was pleased to see the cheering soldiers, looked back at In-gong. Carack, who could read In-gong's intentions more accurately than anyone else, was astonished.

"P-Prince?"

"S-Shutra!

Felicia cried out anxiously. In-gong acted instead of responding and threw Felicia toward Carack. Felicia's biggest fear was falling, so she screamed as she fell 10 meters. Carack immediately threw his shield aside and opened his arms. All the soldiers swallowed their astonishment.

"Kyaaaak...?"

Felicia, who was screaming, lowered her voice involuntarily. Carack smiled bitterly with his arms wide open. Felicia's descent was very slow, and she seemed to be flying smoothly. It was thanks to In-gong's Telekinesis.

"Shutra, you!"

Felicia landed safely in Carack's arms and shouted at In-gong. She sounded like a young girl since she had truly been scared. In-gong smiled and saluted Felicia.

It was at that moment that...

'Felicia really has it hard. Your actions are similar to the sword duke's.'

A voice filled with admonition was heard in his head. In-gong knew the voice.

'Anastasia?'

It was clearly message magic. He turned in the direction of the message magic and saw Anastasia. She was standing above the gates as she spoke to In-gong.

'Shutra, please keep a hold on the Paran clan. I'm going to finish this fight.'

Both Berkintox and Artman had died. It was natural for the morale of the enemies to reach the bottom, especially with the mighty Paran clan warriors disabled. If the

leader had escaped, like Actius, then the enemies might not be completely destroyed. So, this was an opportunity. She could win easily if she opened the gates and led the troops out.

‘As expected from Anastasia.’

Anastasia definitely wouldn’t waste this good opportunity. She was clearly thinking about about building up some merits with this. It was a situation where In-gong had already established the first merit, but the second one was still available.

It wasn’t bad. However, this wasn’t because she was obsessed with merits. Perhaps this action resulted from her sense of responsibility and duty. However, In-gong had no attention of following Anastasia’s will.

‘I won’t just keep hold of them.’

‘What?’

In-gong didn’t answer Anastasia’s question. He took a deep breath and shot off toward the Giant King’s Sword. No one could restrain In-gong. The Paran clan warriors on their knees could only see In-gong. Additionally, there were enemies who were still confused.

After reaching the Giant King’s Sword, In-gong gathered aura and magic power produced by his quad-core and concentrated it on his right hand. In-gong still wasn’t clear about the relationship between the Giant King’s Sword and the giants. However, there were some things he learnt after repeated experiments with the Gullam clan.

The Giant King’s Sword had the power to rule the giants, and that force responded to the magic power of a dragon. The larger the magic power, the stronger the command would be. In-gong poured the magic power into a large jewel attached to the guard of the Giant King’s Sword. Then he used the dragon’s roar of command!

“Drakon Kechatulla commands you! The Paran clan! Stand up!”

The Paran warriors raised their bodies instantly. The sight of hundreds of giants standing at the same time was truly overbearing.

“My name is Shutra Ignus! The 9th Prince of the Demon King’s Palace!”

In-gong's voice was amplified by Green Wind's magic. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that it shook the whole battlefield. All eyes turned to In-gong, and the name of the 9th Prince was carved into their heads.

"The wicked traitor, Berkintox, who deceived the Paran clan is dead! The Paran clan! Wake up from Berkintox's delusion! It is time to show your loyalty, which has never changed in your long history!"

The bad one was Berkintox, and he had died. Thus, the Paran clan had room for salvation.

In-gong didn't know the details, but he didn't think that all of the Paran would have rebellious thoughts against the Demon King's Palace. It was likely they had just been following the orders of their chief, Berkintox as the Paran clan had been loyal for hundreds of years.

Of course, if they agreed with Berkintox, then he planned to punish them. However, it was possible to be lenient on the ordinary Paran clan members. If the Paran clan, which had acted as a barrier on the Western Limit Line, disappeared, then it would be too damaging to the Demon King's Palace.

In-gong once again poured magic power into the Giant King's Sword. There were some Paran clan members who were really moved by In-gong's speech, but there were also those who weren't moved. Thus, In-gong decided to use a coercive method.

"Drakon Kechatulla!"

"Drakon Kechatulla!"

The Paran clan shouted. Whether or not the reverence in those cries were true or not, the Paran clan seemed to have turned completely in the eyes of the orcs and barbarians. Additionally, the Paran clan weren't the only giants on this battlefield.

"Hooray, Your Highness the 9th Prince!"

"Hooray!"

"Follow the prince!"

The Gullam clan shouted loudly, and the soldiers on the walls followed suit, filling the battlefield with voices calling for In-gong.

Anastasia laughed bitterly. She had been completely buried under In-gong's light.

'It can't be helped.'

The most important thing was to win, so it wasn't a bad feeling. Anastasia opened the gates. At first, she planned to be at the front to gain some merits.

Now, the fight was as good as done. Among the orcs, there were those who threw their weapons down and surrendered, while the ranks of the barbarians collapsed as they ran away. It was a reenactment of the pursuit which took place at the central fortress.

'Master, you have a villainous face. But that face is also good. The slightly dangerous feeling is very attractive.'

Green Wind whispered to In-gong who shrugged and looked down at the battlefield.

Not just Berkintox, but the senior general, Artman, had died as well. Two leaders of the rebels had been removed at the same time.

Once this news spread, it was clear that all of Curtis would be shaken. There were still a considerable number of rebels left in the north and west, but they had no focal point. Although the western barbarian king, Actius, remained, he was king of the barbarians, not Curtis. So, he couldn't become a focal point for the forces in the north and west.

As soon as the battle was over, Anastasia spread the news. Most were pleased by this remarkable news, but others couldn't hide their confusion.

Victor, the 3rd Prince and Anastasia's brother, couldn't follow the fast-paced situation. It had only been a few days ago that he had collected troops to crush the rebels and take revenge for Anastasia. Now, his sister had survived, despite his abandonment. Moreover, she hadn't simply survived but had achieved victory as well. Victor had gathered his troops to help in the battle at the 12th base, only to hear that they had already won before he even arrived. It was once again a great success.

Both were very good news, but he was embarrassed. He felt like he had been acting stupid alone. Aside from Victor's circumstances, the 12th base continued being busy.

"I surrender."

Belovaki, a senior warrior of the White Warriors, spoke on behalf of the other Paran clan members. He had been vice captain of the 100 White Warriors and opposed Berkintox's rebellion, causing him to be demoted.

In-gong had no intention of killing all the Paran clan members, so he was very pleased with Belovaki's presence. He had also shown his skills next to Berkintox in Knight Saga.

Belovaki eyes were filled with honour and admiration as he gazed at In-gong. It wasn't just because of the Giant King's Sword. The Paran clan tribe admired the strong, and In-gong had defeated Berkintox, their strongest warrior, which made him worthy of praise.

In-gong left the issue of the surrendered 100 White Warriors to Belovaki. He had been able to neutralize the Paran clan due to the Giant King's Sword.

As soon as the most urgent problem of the Paran clan was over, In-gong met with Anastasia and Felicia. There was a lot of work to clean up after the battle, especially since a lot of people had surrendered this time.

When it was all over, it was already late at night. In-gong lay down on his bed in the 12th base, and the semi-solid Green Wind created a cool wind by In-gong's side.

He had a lot to think about. In-gong had to figure out the relationship between the Giant King's Sword and the giants, as well as figure out why War had been behind the rebellions. A plan was also needed to clean up the north and west.

However, In-gong put all those troubles away because he had something much better to think about.

'I was patient.'

He'd had to devote himself to other things for hours, despite gaining a new skill.

Moreover, it wasn't just a skill. It was Apostle Appointment.

'Now, shall I take a look?'

What was the effect of Apostle Appointment? It was only level one, so how many apostles could he appoint? Additionally, who should he prioritize to appoint as an apostle? There were many candidates in his head, so it was an unexpectedly pleasant problem.

"Master, you seem to be very cheerful."

"Yes."

In-gong grinned as he opened his skills window and examined the new conquest skill, 'Apostle Appointment'.

"Shutra, choose—me or Carack."

"Master, I believe in Master. I definitely believe in you."

Chapter 167

Giants #4

Felicia, who was wearing a white nightgown over pearl pajamas, crossed her legs on the chair and narrowed her eyes. She stared at In-gong sitting on the bed and opened her eyes.

“So, to summarize, the four knights each have the power to appoint an apostle. The eastern barbarian king Karatus and Berkintox whom we fought today were the apostles of war?”

“That’s right.”

In-gong nodded. Felicia paused before saying to In-gong,

“Now, as the Conquest Knight, Shutra is able to appoint an apostle.”

“Exactly.”

Approximately 10 minutes ago, In-gong had called Felicia to his room to explain briefly about the apostles. The story was quick because Felicia had already seen Karatus and Berkintox.

“Hmm. So, what is the difference between an apostle and being a member of the King’s Knights?”

An apostle was able to receive the strength of one of the four knights. However, this was also the same for the King’s Knights. After Felicia became a member of the King’s Knights, she gained confidence in her stamina and magic power.

In-gong scratched his cheek and explained to Felicia,

“Uh... it is a bit strange, but if we say a king’s knight is just a subordinate, an apostle would be more like family? The relationship is a little closer. The king’s knights can consider themselves as minor apostles.”

“Is it like the difference between someone you know and someone important?”

“Well... a little bit?”

It was a somewhat strange analogy, but the meaning was there. Felicia bit her lip and turned her gaze slightly away before asking In-gong again,

“Are there any restrictions on making an apostle? For example, every time you make one, the power of the knight weakens.”

Felicia was sharp. In-gong sighed and replied,

“It is like Noona said. The power of the knight is needed in order to make an apostle. In my case, it is the power of Conquest.”

“Is it the concept of becoming weaker to give strength to an apostle?”

If one point was subtracted from 10 strength, he would only have nine points left. Felicia’s question mixed with the worries in In-gong’s head.

“That’s not it. It’s more like collecting magic power to use a powerful spell? I’m exhausting my accumulated power to make an apostle. That depleted power will be restored over time.”

His power would be slightly weak Immediately after creating the apostle. However, it wasn’t a permanent loss, so he could bear it.

“But there seems to be a certain limit on the number of apostles which can be sustained with the strength. That is why I need to do some research.”

Currently, In-gong’s Apostle Appointment was only level one. There might be some innovative changes once it reached a higher level.

‘And... there are the cases of the other knights.’

The War Knight had put forth several apostles. The apostle of death, who had appeared in Thunderdoom Fortress, had a much stronger power of death than the power of war Berkintox and Artman had. Additionally, the Famine Knight didn’t have

even one apostle. His power of Famine was weaker than In-gong's power of Conquest.

The main reason for the gap between the knights was time. How long they had been a knight, and how long they had handled the power? The War Knight and Death Knight were obviously very old. Otherwise, the current situation couldn't be explained.

"Hmmm... then Shutra, how many apostles can you appoint now?"

"Just one."

In-gong shrugged as he replied to Felicia's question. Felicia sighed and crossed her legs in the opposite direction.

"This is why you need advice."

"Yes, I am worried about who to appoint as an apostle."

He could only make one person his apostle right now, so he was worried about it. Felicia narrowed her eyes and asked,

"Who are the candidates?"

"All of the King's Knights. If I had to add anyone else, maybe Caitlin noona and Chris hyung?"

"Caitlin and Chris?"

"I trust both of them."

The two people had taught him aura and Divine Beast Authority. He had already established an alliance with both of them even before he formed a relationship with Felicia. Felicia twisted her lips at In-gong's words and spread open her fan to hide her face. Then she said,

"Hum hum, wouldn't it be better for the first one to be among the knights?"

Her ears were twitching slightly. It was at that moment that Green Wind appeared suddenly beside In-gong in her solid form and nodded.

“Princess is right. Master, I think so as well. It should be within the King’s Knights.”

According to Felicia and Green Wind, Chris and Caitlin weren’t knights, so they were eliminated. Felicia, who had a strong sense of pride, said quickly,

“As a non-combatant, shouldn’t Nayatra be subtracted?”

“That’s right. Princess’ words are very correct. It is good if someone other than Nayatra is an apostle.”

Nayatra was quickly eliminated.

“And... General Vandal is too far away isn’t he? There are many times when he won’t be together with you.”

“He isn’t with Prince.”

Once again, Green Wind agreed with Felicia’s words. The two people carefully excluded Vandal and Silvan from the candidates.

“Well, well. So, now, there are four candidates?”

Felicia glanced at In-gong with expectant eyes. In-gong tried to hold back a laugh as he told Felicia and Green Wind,

“In fact, I have already set the candidates. Three people.”

“Three people?”

“Noona, Green Wind, and Carack. There are two reasons for selecting these three candidates.”

In-gong raised his fingers one by one.

“First, they need to have a long experience with the power of Conquest. Second, they need to be someone emotionally close to me. It is good to have someone who meets those conditions in order to have a more efficient apostle.”

Karma had always followed In-gong, so she had a long experience with the power of

Conquest. However, she was unfortunately eliminated because of the second reason.

“Umm.”

Felicia made a satisfied sound after hearing the two reasons from In-gong. Green Wind then pulled at In-gong’s arm and asked,

“Master, then it is me as well?”

She had been with him for a long time and was emotionally close. As Green Wind’s eyes gleamed, Felicia quickly folded up her fan.

“No, Green Wind is always with Shutra. The apostle should be someone who is able to fight independently.”

Both the barbarian king and Berkintox had moved apart from the War Knight. As Felicia swiftly eliminated Green Wind as a candidate, she opened her fan with a large sound.

“Shutra, choose—me or Carack.”

Her tone indicated that she was feeling a little bit impatient. Green Wind ignored Felicia’s words and grabbed In-gong’s hand.

“Master. I believe in Master. I definitely believe in you.”

In-gong finally laughed. He looked between Felicia and Green Wind, and asked,

“Do you both want to become stronger?”

Becoming an apostle would make them stronger than they were now. Felicia avoided In-gong’s gaze as she replied,

“I-It isn’t like that. Just...”

“Just?”

“Master, I want to be your first apostle.”

Green Wind suddenly interrupted. Her passionate voice seemed to be trying to reach his heart. Then In-gong looked at Felicia.

“Noona as well?”

“I-I don’t care about being your first apostle. I just like to be first.”

“Well, I see.”

In-gong’s eyes narrowed, and Felicia’s ears turned redder. She eventually cried out,

“Anyway! Decide quickly—me or Carack.”

“Master.”

Instead of answering, In-gong nodded a few times before getting up from his seat. He had a new proposal in order to make it fair for everyone.

“Call Carack and ask him.”

“Hmmm, I don’t know what an apostle is, but I think it should be Green Wind rather than Princess.”

After being invited, Carack heard about the situation and said that with folded arms. As Felicia and Green Wind looked at Carack for different reasons, Carack explained in a relaxed voice,

“Doesn’t Green Wind always fight with Prince? So, if Green Wind becomes stronger, Prince will as well. If there is only one apostle, then I think it is right to strengthen Prince’s power. After all, the most important thing is the Prince’s safety.”

As expected from Carack, it was a reasonable and relevant reason.

“Oh... Orc, you are a good guy. It seems that I have misunderstood you.”

Carack laughed at Green Wind’s words.

“Then how do you normally see me?”

“I saw you as an orc, Orc.”

Green Wind said bluntly, and Carack laughed again.

“Hmm, then is it decided on Green Wind?”

In-gong asked all of them to be precise. Then he looked at Felicia, who covered her face with a fan and said,

“Lots.”

“Huh?”

“Let’s draw lots. All three people have good reasons.”

Even as she spoke, shame grew in her voice. Carack clicked his tongue.

“Princess, obsession is bad.”

“Am I acting obsessed?”

“You are obsessed. Obsessed Princess.”

Green Wind added, dealing the heaviest blow. Felicia stared in disbelief, and her long ears sagged. It was at this moment that In-gong couldn’t bear it any longer and burst out laughing.

“Well, actually... there is no reason to argue.”

“What does that mean?”

Carack blinked as he asked. Felicia and Green Wind both stared at In-gong. In-gong shrugged and replied,

“The apostle of the Conquest Knight is a little special.”

The Four Knights of the Apocalypse had different powers. Therefore, the creation of

an apostle was slightly different for every knight.

“Now, I can appoint one apostle. If it were the same as other knights, then I can make only one fixed apostle, but... the Conquest Knight has an ability that makes it different.”

The King's Knights. With a crown on his head, this was the power of the Conquest Knight, who was born with the fate of a king.

“The Conquest Knight can upgrade any knight to an apostle. It is a temporary, non-permanent upgrade, so I can change the person receiving the upgrade, depending on the situation.”

The members of the King's Knights were already like minor apostles. So, it was a type of power-up which turned minor apostles into real apostles.

‘Thanks to this system, Karma can become an apostle as well.’

It was a bit of a sorry story, but if he had to prioritize the appointment of an apostle, Karma was the one in the lead. She would become the first one to receive the Apostle Appointment, and he would change the apostle depending on the situation. Karma was one of the most important people on missions due to her great mobility.

After hearing In-gong's explanation, Carack shook his head and pointed at the chair where Felicia was sitting.

“Is it just like that big chair? As it grows, the number of people sitting on it at the same time can increase?”

“Exactly. As expected of Carack.”

Yes, it was a decent analogy. Green Wind nodded. However, Felicia was different. She stared straight at In-gong and said,

“Wait a minute, wait a minute. Then why didn't you say that from the beginning?”

Things would have gone a lot faster if he had said that first. At Felicia's question, Carack and Green Wind also looked at In-gong with curiosity. In-gong shrugged and replied,

“It was cute seeing you argue with each other over who should be first.”

In particular, Felicia...

Felicia’s face turned red at his words, and she fanned herself angrily. Her expression was now grouchy. Carack shook his head while Green Wind narrowed her eyes.

Some time passed as they talked. As Felicia stretched out with weariness, Carack asked like he suddenly remembered something,

“Prince, then should you give Apostle Appointment a try? Who will be the first apostle?”

“Huh?”

“Even if Apostle Appointment isn’t permanent, there still has to be the first apostle.”

He once again had a logical and valid point. Felicia and Green Wind asked at the same time,

“Shutra?”

“Master?”

In-gong laughed awkwardly.

“Uh, can I really be the first?”

Karma, who was invited to In-gong’s room in the middle of the night, asked Felicia and Green Wind. Although she knew very little about the Conquest Knight, it soon became clear that Felicia and Green Wind placed great meaning in being the first apostle.

Poor Karma’s shoulders sagged, while Carack put a big hand on her shoulder and said reassuringly,

“This is the most fair solution.”

If he chose either Felicia or Green Wind, the one who wasn't chosen would be out of control. Felicia and Green Wind both had the same expression on their faces as In-gong turned to Karma with a somewhat tired expression.

"Karma, close your eyes."

Karma closed her eyes, and In-gong reached out toward her. Then the Conquest Coat of Arms emerged on Karma's forehead. The new power of the King's Knights, the apostle promotion...

In-gong gave Karma strength, and a pure white light enveloped her body.

"What did you do that you didn't sleep all night?"

Chapter 168

Giants #5

Next to the main office of the 12th base, there was a space provided for meetings.

Anastasia, who had settled in the meeting room earlier than anyone else, looked between In-gong and Felicia with a slight frown.

“What did you do that you didn’t sleep all night? I heard that a number of people came and went from Shutra’s room.”

During the night, there had been many visitors to In-gong’s room. In-gong shrugged and replied,

“Just... well, this and that.”

“Hrmm.”

Anastasia’s eyes narrowed. Felicia noticed and quickly intervened,

“Now, didn’t you say there were many things to discuss today? Let’s start quickly. Yes?”

Anastasia couldn’t help smiling at the cute sight. It was because she hadn’t seen Felicia’s charm for a while. However, that didn’t last long. Anastasia restored her refined expression and glanced at In-gong and Felicia.

“It’s about the disposal of those who surrendered.”

Currently, there were more prisoners than troops being held at the 12th base. If they didn’t move quickly, it was clear a disturbance would occur. Those who surrendered or were captured could be mostly divided into four types:

The Hwarin and Paran giant clans; The orcs who were originally soldiers of the Demon King’s Palace; And the barbarians who came from beyond the limit line.

“The barbarians aren’t a big problem. We can handle them as usual.”

The future of caught barbarians was always one of two options: execution; or slavery. In-gong had already experienced this after fighting the eastern barbarians, so he didn’t pay much attention to it. For the Demon King’s Palace, the barbarians were enemies. So, mercy couldn’t be given to them.

Felicia frowned and said,

“Are the original army members the problem?”

“That’s right, especially the Hwarin and Paran clan.”

Anastasia took a sip of tea instead of sighing. In contrast to Felicia and Caitlin, every move of Anastasia’s was as elegant as a true princess. However, she seemed a bit more relaxed this time. Her voice and eyes were filled with fatigue.

“In other words, we have to punish the orcs properly. The commanders should be executed, but we don’t need to take the lives of the ordinary soldiers. Just think of it as they were following orders.”

Anastasia wasn’t particularly generous as it was a practical concern. Many rebels still remained in Curtis. Now that Berkintox, the leader of the rebellion, was dead, they would be watching.

They needed to decide whether to surrender or continue to fight. Tough punishment would just increase the rebels’ will to fight. Now was the time to release the stranglehold on their necks. It was clear that the soldiers would surrender if they could live.

‘The real punishment will be after Curtis has calmed down.’

Anastasia swallowed those words and continued explaining.

“But the Hwarin and Paran clans are different. The Hwarin has directly damaged the demon king’s army. They destroyed the transportation formations, and the soldiers guarding them. The Paran clan members who surrendered were Berkintox’s bodyguards.”

They couldn't be handled in the same manner as regular soldiers, particularly the Hwarin clan. Due to succumbing to In-gong's influence, the Paran clan had killed less than the Hwarin, who had killed hundreds of soldiers.

"But Unni, executing all the giants is unreasonable."

"I thought so as well. The loss of manpower will be too big. Moreover, it may increase the survivors' will to fight unnecessarily."

The worst thing about a civil war was that no matter which side won, the overall power would be weakened. In particular, thousands of soldiers would be required to replace the Paran clan giants who had excellent combat power. It wouldn't be easy to create a great number of new troops.

There was more. The number of Paran clan members reached up to 1,000. It was a number which included the young and the old, but there were still hundreds of Paran clan members left. There needed to be some way for them to live. Otherwise, there would be a desperate battle for survival.

Anastasia opened her mouth after a short silence.

"However, this time, we have no choice but to kill many of the captured Hwarin. Among the 100 Paran members, the ones close to Berkintox should be executed. The rest of the giants, like the orcs, will be given appropriate punishment."

It might be cold or calculative, but the Hwarin were wanderers and didn't really help in the defense of Curtis. They were troops which didn't need to be replaced, and the aftermath of their deaths would be small.

There was no mercy for those who had destroyed the transportation formations and killed hundreds of soldiers. In that sense, the 100 members of the Paran clan were lucky. If they had actively engaged in battle with soldiers of the demon king, they wouldn't have received such a light punishment.

In-gong nodded with a heavy expression as they discussed things like implementing heavy taxes over the next few years.

"It isn't bad. Moreover, Anastasia noona is in charge of Curtis. So, I will respect Noona's will."

“I will follow Unni’s will.”

The atmosphere sank after discussing executions. Then after hearing In-gong and Felicia’s answer, Anastasia sighed and opened her mouth to speak again.

“Okay, the matter of punishment has been settled. The following issue is regarding the rest of the rebels.”

Anastasia pointed to the map of Curtis spread out on the table in the meeting room. Colourful sculptures represented the position and number of the current forces on the map.

“It is clear that the east will collapse when touched. The problem is the north and the west, but I don’t think it will be that difficult.”

From the beginning, the east had simply been watching the situation. They weren’t stupid enough to rebel after Berkintox died.

On the other hand, the problematic north and west had no focal point. Berkintox had used his best cards in order to finish the battle at the 12th base quickly. As a result, it had brought catastrophic losses to the rebels.

Berkintox had lost his life, the second leader, Artman, had been killed, and the 100 giants had been absorbed into the demon king’s army. The rebels still had Actius, but he was a barbarian and couldn’t be the center of the rebels. There was also a very high probability that Actius would run away instead of fight. So, Actius and the barbarians would probably rush back over the limit line.

“Excuse me, Shutra. There is something I want to ask you.”

Anastasia turned to In-gong. She paused for a moment before saying with a slight smile,

“Can you leave recapturing the north and west to me and Victor orabeoni?”

Anastasia was beautiful, overly beautiful. Her thin neckline revealed a smooth collarbone and white skin, enough to drive a man mad. Her small shoulders, busty chest and narrow waist covered by thick clothing stimulated one’s foolish

imagination. Additionally, she had a nice scent. Her beauty was enough to make someone lose their soul just by looking at her.

She smiled at In-gong, but there was no smile back.

“As expected, it didn’t work.”

Anastasia frowned while sweating. Although she had the strange eyes of a succubus, she was staring at In-gong in her usual elegant manner.

Felicia guessed the situation and shot up from her seat.

“Unni!”

“Felicia, did you give the Tears of a Dark Elf to Shutra? You’re really too much. Did you really have to give that away? You didn’t even ask me.”

Anastasia looked sad, and even Felicia’s heart seemed shaken. However, Felicia also had the Tears of a Dark Elf which made them virtually immune to mental attacks.

“Unni, do you really have to use your beauty against your younger siblings?”

Anastasia responded to the grouchy words with an elegant smile,

“I knew it wouldn’t work.”

She still seemed elegant despite the rude words. Indeed, it was a truly graceful appearance. Felicia’s mouth opened and closed like she had no words, while Anastasia turned her gaze back to In-gong. She stared at In-gong without using any enchantments and said,

“Shutra, what do you think of my request?”

It was a political demand.

In-gong had already gained large merits during Berkintox’s rebellion. He had rescued Anastasia, who was in charge of Curtis, and in the process, he had defeated the barbarian king, Actius. He had personally killed Berkintox, the rebellion leader, and Artman, who had turned his back on the Demon King’s Palace despite being a senior

general.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say he had virtually shut down the rebellion alone. If In-gong recovered the north and west as well, then Anastasia and Victor would be truly ridiculed.

Anastasia had some small merits. She had played a role in defeating Actius, escaping the central and commanding the whole army at the 12th base.

However, Victor really had no merits. Moreover, he had abandoned his sister callously. It was obvious that he would be scorned when compared to In-gong who had broken through an army of 30,000 enemies alone. The only merit possible for him was recapturing the north and west. That way, he could maintain his pride at the Demon King's Palace.

However, for that to happen, In-gong would need to yield that merit.

Anastasia felt nervous under her mask of calmness while In-gong stared at her. Instead of annoying Anastasia by dragging out the time, he answered immediately,

"There is one condition."

"Tell me."

In-gong glanced at Felicia. Last night, Felicia had foreseen that Anastasia would do exactly this. So, he had decided on a condition with Felicia.

"Later in the future, you will help me once, regardless of your own interests—using all the power that Noona has."

Recapturing the north and west was post-war work. There was no need to go crazy because he had already gained huge merits. So, he would prefer for Anastasia to owe him a debt. Anastasia frowned at In-gong's demand and replied,

"Shutra, I am a princess of the Demon King's Palace. I won't cooperate with anything that goes against the Demon King's Palace."

"Then let's put it as a 'favour' as long as it 'isn't against the Demon King's Palace'. I am also a prince of the Demon King's Palace. I have no intention of doing anything to go

against that.”

That was actually the case. Stopping Zephyr’s ambitions and killing the War Knight and Death Knight were good things for the Demon King’s Palace. Anastasia lowered her eyes like it couldn’t be helped and nodded.

“Okay, let’s do that. I also owe you my life. I will do well if you ever have a request.”

Anastasia told him before turning back to Felicia. She then laughed and continued,

“So, don’t worry about it. I won’t forget about this. I will repay everything in full. Are you sure Shutra isn’t asking for too much?”

Felicia smiled and shrugged at the words.

“I am on Shutra’s side.”

“You should be on Unni’s side.”

Anastasia whined, but that just widened the smile on Felicia’s face. Anastasia laughed as well. From the beginning, her whining has been a joke.

‘It is better than I thought.’

In Knight Saga, Felicia and Anastasia had always been on the same side. Their conversation at the tea party had been fairly tense, but that seemed to be due to a misunderstanding.

“In that case, Anastasia noona, I’ll head to the southwest with Felicia.”

Anastasia tilted her head at In-gong’s words.

“To the residence of the lizardmen?”

“Yes, I would like to look at the ruins and surrounding areas. Felicia noona would also like that.”

Felicia was someone who loved visiting ruins. However, that wasn’t the only reason. He wanted to dig deeper into the secret of the Giant King’s Sword and the giants.

Galang had said the lizardmen were also told the story of Drakon Kechatulla. It was an ancient mystery, so they might know more about the Giant King's Sword and dragon warrior.

"Yes, go if you want."

Anastasia had no apparent reason to refuse.

In-gong left the 12th base the next day. Anastasia stood on the wall and watched In-gong's group head west, and she sighed without realising it.

It had only been a few days. She still remembered the central fortress when she closed her eyes. Victor wouldn't come. He had abandoned Anastasia. His behaviour was understandable. There had only been a low chance of victory. It had been a situation where it would have been easy for them to die together.

That's why she didn't feel resentment. Neither could she reproach him for it.

Instead, she had a different idea. What would Anastasia have done? If Victor was trapped in the central fortress, would she have gone to save him? Would she really have given up on Victor?

Anastasia laughed bitterly. Then she remembered another family member. She had escaped the crisis because of Shutra.

"I'm still soft."

Anastasia muttered. Her mother, Titania, was always worried about her being too soft. Maybe this softness was something she had inherited from her father, the demon king?

However, she didn't hate it. She remembered the words Baikal used to say when she was a child.

'Anastasia, we aren't enemies. We are competitors running towards the same goal, and we can lead each other to a higher place.'

He was truly soft. When she thought about it, he truly was a fool of a brother.

‘I don’t dislike it.’

She didn’t dislike Baikal’s words. In fact, she was able to confirm it this time. Shutra’s face popped up. She couldn’t forget about the time when he came to rescue her.

‘Everyone is soft.’

Anastasia shrugged and smiled brightly.

‘Master, why are you laughing like this? You look stupid. I also like that about Master.’

“It’s just... I feel good.”

In-gong looked at the wall of the 12th base with aura-enhanced eyes before turning back to the front again. It was truly comfortable being on Maybach’s back after a long time away. There were 100 soldiers behind In-gong, and all of them were horsemen with their own mounts.

“There is a long way to go, and isn’t the party small? We’ll be ‘faster than the wind.’”

The new soldiers smiled without thinking, but the others were different. Their bodies flinched reflexively. Maybach was the same as he recalled what had happened in Evian. In particular, Felicia showed a dramatic reaction.

“Shutra, did Noona do something wrong to you?”

Her face was really cute. In-gong suppressed the urge to pinch her cheek and laughed cheerfully.

“I’ll be in the lead. And Prince, you shouldn’t bully Princess. It doesn’t matter how fun it is.”

Carack admonished him while Green Wind appeared beside In-gong in a semi-solid state. It was for the sake of Protection of the Wind.

In-gong looked at the west again. He could smell a large forest from the wind.

“Go.”

In-gong pulled out the flag of light, and Green Wind used Protection of the Wind on everyone.

They moved toward the west.

Chapter 169

Victory

Curtis was a rainy and wet area, with the lizardmen residing in the swamp region. The lizardmen called the swamp area, Kalung Puoga, with many spectacular cities.

As there wasn't much hard ground to build on, the lizardmen built on the swamps and lakes. It was obvious, but it was impossible to build ordinary buildings on a swamp or lake. Therefore, the buildings in Kalung Puoga had two forms.

One form was a ship. These were buildings in the form of large or small ships. Due to the chains connecting the ships, there was a sense of stability, just like standing on the ground.

The other form was a floating building. It was made by embedding long pillars into the swamp and then building on top of it. It was an ignorant way to use trees, but the area nearby was a forest. There were many giant trees in the forest, so there was no shortage of wood.

Carack walked along a bridge made of little ferry boats. It was a hot and humid area, so his whole body was sweaty. The lizardmen soaking in the swamp greeted Carack. They were the common people of Kalung Puoga, not soldiers of the Demon King's Palace.

In-gong's group had arrived in Kalung Puoga this morning, and it was now noon. This was the hottest time of the day, and it truly felt like it. There was no one who wasn't sweating.

Normally, the trip would take four to five days, but In-gong's group had made it in just two days. They had heard that In-gong's group was coming, but the lizardman couldn't help feeling astonishment and admiration.

"Those from the Demon King's Palace are truly great."

"I think so as well."

Carack laughed at the admiration of the lizardmen soldiers who guided them around Kalung Puoga. There was great admiration for the 'faster than the wind' method. However, the soldiers who had experienced the 'faster than the wind' method for two days felt dislike for it, rather than admiration.

Kalung Puoga consisted of mainly one-storey buildings. Carack crossed a large building and arrived at a room.

"Princess, are you okay?"

Felicia, who was lying down in the middle of the room, replied loudly to Carack's question,

"Do I look okay?"

"Well, it seems like you have a problem with the heat, rather than exhaustion."

Like Carack, Felicia was sweaty. The dark elves' high-exposure clothes didn't help in stopping the heat of Kalung Puoga.

"Yes. It seems like you are getting used to this. Have you become stronger?"

"It seems so."

She had become strong, but this time it was because In-gong had controlled the pace. There was no urgent reason, so he didn't feel the need to drain Felicia.

"Carack, please have some of this."

The sweating Delia handed out a drink in a large metal cup. It was a cold drink to cool him down.

"Thank you. Everywhere in the swamp is hot."

Carack smiled after emptying the cup. Felicia stared at Delia's red cheeks, wondering when her aide's tastes had distorted, before asking something else.

"Shutra?"

They had arrived together, but she hadn't seen him since. Felicia had collapsed as soon as she arrived at the accommodation. Carack replied with a laugh,

"He is talking to the officers. He wanted me to come and check on Princess. It is because Princess is very precious."

"Hrmm, hrmm. You say that, but he won't stop teasing his Noona."

Felicia complained while covering her face with a fan. Carack chuckled when he saw her twitching ears.

"Princess' face is truly bright. Indeed, a smiling face suits Princess better than a grim look. I think that all smiling women are pretty, but Princess seems especially beautiful."

The compliments flowed out as naturally as water. The contents weren't that unusual, but it was important that the speaker was an orc. Felicia smiled with admiration.

"Carack, you really are an orc, right?"

"I am an orc. I don't know why you keep asking me this."

"Carack is special."

Delia replied in a soft voice, with a hint of pride mixed in it. Felicia resisted making a comment and changed the topic. A new visitor had come to chat; it was In-gong.

"Huh? You're here already?"

"The talk ended quicker than expected."

In-gong responded, and with the drink Delia handed him, he sat down in a chair situated opposite Felicia.

"How are you?"

"Not bad. What did you talk about?"

In-gong shrugged at Felicia's question and then said,

"I just listened to the situation of the locals. I also heard some things about Victor hyung."

Victor had headed to the northwest two days ago, leading a group of lizardmen. It was his mission to take control of the west while Anastasia recaptured the east. Therefore, there was no chance for In-gong's party to meet him.

'Well, there is no reason to encounter him.'

Victor was truly embarrassed by his work at Curtis, so it would just be uncomfortable meeting him.

'He is a prince.'

He was also just as good-looking as Anastasia.

Then while In-gong was still thinking, Felicia asked,

"Is there something special?"

"No. The story is predictable. Victor left because he was embarrassed."

"I can imagine."

Felicia looked away and shrugged bitterly. It was at this moment that a lizardman, who had been guarding the entrance, entered the room at a quick pace.

"Your Highness. The priest has arrived. She wants to see Prince."

His face and voice were quite excited. In-gong cocked his head and asked,

"Priest? From the inner sanctuary?"

"Yes, Your Highness. The priest of the Dragon Temple."

Felicia's eyes shone at the words, 'Dragon Temple'. The Dragon Temple was the spiritual home of the lizardmen living in Curtis. The lizardmen, who believed

themselves to be the dragon's descendents, not only admired dragons but also made them objects of their faith. The Dragon Temple was located deep inside the forest and was the headquarters of their faith.

In-gong could understand why the soldier in front of him was excited. According to the lizardmen, the priests, who lived in the Dragon Temple, were closer to being dragons. In other words, they were closer to being nobles, although the meaning was different to what it meant in the Demon King's Palace.

The lizardmen felt admiration and love toward the priests of the temple. They really believed the priests were superior to them. By default, the priests lived deep in the forest and rarely met ordinary lizardmen. So, the soldier was excited just from having a short conversation with the priest.

Apart from the soldiers, the reason why Felicia was excited was simple. The Dragon Temple was an ancient ruin which had been passed down for thousands of years.

"I'll meet her right now."

Felicia cheered quietly at In-gong's answer. The soldier also replied with an excited face,

"I understand, Your Highness. I will call the priest here."

The soldier exited as quickly as he had entered. It was around half an hour before the soldier returned.

In-gong and Felicia sat side-by-side and peered down. The lizardmen had heard rumours the priest was coming, so they had gathered. 41 people were staring silently with a serious look, so the auditorium felt even hotter.

'Master, they are coming.'

Green Wind whispered in his ears suddenly. The priest was wearing a white robe and a hood over her head. She stepped before In-gong and Felicia, then she took off her hood slowly in an elegant motion.

At that moment, the whole room was filled with silent admiration.

The priest was a woman. Unlike the other lizardmen with dark green or blue scales, she had very beautiful silver scales. The shape of her face was very neat, and the blue eyes felt soft and powerful. Despite being a different species, In-gong still thought she was pretty.

The reaction of the lizardmen was more intense. In their own terms, her beauty was truly devastating.

‘Is she roughly in the same class as Anastasia and Felicia?’

He saw Felicia every day, so he had become accustomed to it. However, she was a tremendous beauty.

In-gong recalled Anastasia, who had used the succubus attraction, before shaking his head. Anastasia was certainly incredibly charming at that time, but this was different. She couldn’t be compared to the pure priest in front of him.

In-gong recalled Green Wind’s sacred expression and Caitlin’s bright smile; the priest was similar to that. The lizardman priest bowed to In-gong’s party.

“This humble girl greets Drakon Kechatulla, the great dragon warrior.”

Her voice was like rolling jade, and the lizardmen in the auditorium were thrilled, like fans seeing an idol singer. In-gong was worried they would faint. Felicia responded with a wide smile,

“I am 6th Princess Felicia. This is 9th Prince Shutra. It is good to meet you.”

“Thank you for your warm welcome. This girl is Moriyu.”

The priest revealed her name to In-gong and Felicia. This time, In-gong was the one who asked a question,

“Moriyu, why did you come to see me?”

“Great Dragon Warrior, the high priest wants to see the dragon warrior. Please visit the Dragon Temple.”

The lizardmen in the auditorium let out sounds of admiration. This time it wasn't due to Moriyu's beauty. The Dragon Temple in the forest was a closed off place. They had never imagined someone would be invited there directly. Even Victor hadn't been invited to the Dragon Temple.

When they thought about it, that wasn't the only surprising thing. Moriyu showed up exactly on the day that In-gong had arrived at Kalung Puoga. This was despite the fact that In-gong's group had shortened the usual schedule by three days.

Was there an oracle?

Felicia pulled In-gong's arms slightly. She looked quite calm, but that was just on the surface. Her two eyes staring at In-gong had a strong desire to run to the Dragon Temple right now.

'Quickly! Yes? Quickly!'

Felicia's voice rang only in his ears. In-gong nodded and looked back at Moriyu. In-gong wanted to visit the Dragon Temple too. After all, he had come to Kalung Puoga in order to find out the story of the warrior Drakon Kechatulla.

"Thank you for the invitation. I will make the visit."

"Thank you for your response. This girl will guide you."

Moriyu answered with a sincere voice before bowing to In-gong. He could feel clearly the sadness of the surrounding lizardmen.

Two hours later, In-gong left Kalung Puoga and headed to the Dragon Temple.

Everything inside the forest was still huge.

The towering trees reminded him of buildings, and the bugs were still horrible. The carnivorous plants and wild beasts didn't change. They hid in the natural environment of the forest and sought a chance to eat.

The weather was hot and humid. It was much more humid than the large forest near the Gullam village, and there were also deep swamps and lakes.

The most terrible thing was that the journey was long. Unlike the exploration with the Gullam hunters which had lasted just two days, they had to travel for three days this time. The Dragon Temple was located deep in the forest, and In-gong was able to see why the priests lived a closed off life. The temple itself was so remote that it was naturally isolated from the outside world.

Despite all these problems, the journey with the lizardmen was quite pleasant.

There were few attacks. In-gong's party didn't move on foot. Moriyu brought some dragon-like creatures from the Dragon Temple, and they were huge like the creatures in the forest. There were animals resembling Tyrannosauruses and Triceratops lined up, so the beasts of the forest didn't appear.

There were also quite a few lizardmen escorting In-gong's group. Altogether, there were 60 escorts, who all had a strong desire to visit the Dragon Temple. Thanks to the special incense of the lizardmen, there were no flying insects around them. The most exciting thing was the lizardmen's traditional clothes to help with the heat.

"Strange."

In-gong looked at himself with a surprised expression. In-gong was dressed completely different than usual. He was wearing only short pants, with gold ornaments decorating his body. However, he wasn't cooled just by taking off his clothes. The ornaments created a comfortable environment using magic. Even in this humid weather, Moriyu was able to wear her hood thanks to magic.

"Still, I feel strangely ashamed in this outfit."

Felicia looked at herself with a slight frown. She was dressed in a similar manner to In-gong. However, her style was slightly different from In-gong's. Felicia's gold ornaments overlapped with each other to look like clothes. Therefore, her waist and thighs were exposed, but her shoulders and arms weren't.

In-gong didn't see it as any different from Felicia's usual clothes, but she thought differently.

“Prince, stop looking. Princess is shy.”

Carack laughed while shaking the gold ornaments that he too was wearing. Delia and Karma, who were dressed in a similar manner to Felicia, were ashamed. When looking at Delia’s thighs and Carack’s biceps, In-gong thought that this style suited Carack the best.

Then the fourth day passed. Felicia was now accustomed to the new outfit and felt no shame as she gazed at a distant place. She was filled with awe.

Beyond the swamp was a giant lake, and the lake was shining with the bright blue from the sky. However, the real surprise was something else. There was a huge building floating in the air above the surface of the lake. It was a large and beautiful palace with a rounded roof. There was no rain, yet there were several rainbows.

“Beautiful.”

Felicia cried out. In-gong nodded with agreement.

It was the Dragon Temple, the lizardmen’s spiritual home.

In-gong felt his dragon heart respond. The heart was throbbing.

Chapter 170

Victory #2

At the lake shore, a white boat was waiting for In-gong's party. It was wide and long, but it was a transportation ship, so it didn't have a roof.

Only one person was on the boat. Moriyu climbed onto the boat first and bowed politely. In-gong understood intuitively as to what she meant: only In-gong's companions could visit the Dragon Temple.

The 61 lizardmen were In-gong and Felicia's escorts. By requesting for them not to enter the temple, it could be interpreted as being rude. However, In-gong didn't mind. If the Dragon Temple was plotting something, then he would just destroy the conspiracy.

Looking back at Felicia, it seemed like she also understood the general situation. She agreed with a wink and climbed onto the boat first. Then she was followed by Delia, Karma, Carack, and finally In-gong.

The lizardmen realized belatedly that they couldn't visit the Dragon Temple. They were upset but chose to wait on the shore instead of making a fuss. They respected the authority of the Dragon Temple and were also faithful to In-gong and Felicia.

The boat carrying In-gong's group moved quickly despite having no sails. After moving 100 meters, they arrived at the Dragon Temple where several priests in hoods were waiting.

"Drakon Kechatulla, we greet the Great Dragon Warrior."

The priests removed their hoods and greeted the party. Looking at them, In-gong could understand why ordinary lizardmen called the priests of the Dragon Temple as 'those who were closer to dragons'.

The male priests were one or two heads taller than ordinary lizardmen, and their scales were bigger and thicker. The female priests were beautiful like Moriyu. Each

time they moved, their scales seemed to shine.

“The high priest is waiting for you inside.”

A male priest, who acted as the representative, said politely to them. The priests acted like they were facing the dragon warrior, rather than the royal family of the Demon World. The priests’ interest was focused solely on In-gong. Rather than complaining about that fact, Felicia urged In-gong on. She wanted to enter the temple quickly.

“Please guide me.”

In-gong refrained from laughing as he instructed them, causing all the priests to get up at once. Despite their big size, their steps were light. When they got closer, the temple itself looked like a huge dragon. The white plates attached to the outside of the temple looked like dragon scales. Inside the temple, the ceiling was high and simple, and it shone like bright, white light in the sun.

Moriyu and the priests continued straight ahead, and a big room soon emerged in their sights. There was cold water flowing along the rim of the room, with a small waterfall on both walls. Felicia let out a sound of admiration as soon as she entered the big room. However, it wasn’t just due to the sacred feeling of the room. Felicia’s gaze was sparkling with curiosity as she gazed at the lizardman in the middle of the room.

“The high priest greets Drakon Kechatulla. I would also like to greet you, Princess of the Demon King’s Palace.”

Felicia was the first to bow to the high priest. She had a bright smile on her face.

“I am delighted to meet the descendant of the great dragon.”

Felicia said elegantly. In-gong agreed with Felicia’s words in his heart.

‘It is real.’

The lizardmen claimed to be descendants of a dragon, but they were very different in comparison to the draconians.

However, the high priest was different. Wings sprouted from his back, making him look much more like a dragon than the draconians, who had a human-like appearance.

It was enough to make one believe he was a polymorphic dragon, instead of a lizardmen.

The high priest was an old man, and the deep look in his eyes proved that.

“Drakon Kechatulla, the great dragon warrior. I would like to speak plainly. You are here because I have something to tell you.”

The high priest didn’t waste time with unnecessary rhetoric. Among the lizardmen, he was particularly gigantic. He stared into In-gong’s eyes and said,

“A few days ago, the dragon warrior awakened the Giant King’s Sword. Thanks to this old body, I can finally be sure that the dragon warrior is back after a long period of time.”

“High Priest, do you have a Giant King’s Sword here?”

Felicia asked. The high priest shook his head.

“The dragon warrior only had one Giant King’s Sword. Instead, there is something which can be called the brother of the Giant King’s Sword. It is this.”

Like In-gong and Felicia, the high priest was dressed in golden ornaments, and he lifted up something which was hanging from his waist. It was a beautifully painted horn.

“This is the Dragon’s Horn. Just like the Giant King’s Sword, it has the power to rule the lizardmen. It has been sleeping for a long time until it woke up a few days ago.”

There were several large gems embedded in the horn, and the gem on the Giant King’s Sword shone with a similar light.

“Great Dragon Warrior, you may wonder why these things exist and why they respond to the dragon warrior. From now on, I will tell you everything I know.”

The high priest took a deep breath for a moment. Then his gaze looked far away, like he was engrossed in his memories.

“The giants were divided into three during the turbulence of time and lost their

traditions. We lizardmen have also forgotten most of the traditions and our mission after so many years. I am the only one who can remember, just barely, some things that occurred in the past.”

It hadn’t been a thousand years; it was much longer than that.

“Drakon Kechatulla, the warrior who fought against the evil red serpent god... The giants and lizardmen were created to help the dragon warrior. These species were born to fight the evil red serpent god.”

“Treasures.”

Felicia said suddenly. The swamp mammoths they’d had to fight when they faced the Red Lightning tribe were treasures of the Great Enkidu, and the swamp mammoths lived with the lizardmen.

The high priest smiled.

“You can say that they are like treasures, just on a larger scale. The lizardmen and giants were made by the ancient dragon.”

“Are you talking about the elder dragons?”

The high priest shook his head at Felicia’s question.

“I don’t know for certain. However, the creation of the lizardmen and giants happened at least 10,000 years ago. The elder dragons known today aren’t that old.”

10,000 years... That was a large unit of time. Once again, Felicia asked hurriedly,

“High Priest, do you know about the indigenous species?”

“They certainly existed. But they disappeared 10,000 years ago. Their civilization was destroyed by the wicked red serpent god.”

This was the first time In-gong had heard this story, but he was convinced that it was true. Ruins of the indigenous species could be found all over the Demon World, and such large destruction wouldn’t occur naturally.

“But you can rest assured. The red serpent god has disappeared. It is thanks to the work of the indigenous species and the great dragon warrior.”

There was a kind smile on the face of the high priest. He looked proud of his ancestors. In-gong asked,

“High Priest, what is the dragon warrior?”

“The dragon warrior refers to a person with the heart and soul of a dragon—an agent of the sacred dragons to maintain the world.”

In-gong currently had a dragon heart because of Ainkel, but according to the words of the high priest, people like In-gong existed 10,000 years ago.

“High Priest, do you know about the Four Knights of the Apocalypse?”

The high priest’s eyes sharpened at the question, and he expressed a fierce hostility.

“They are called the riders of destruction—the unique people who fought with the evil red serpent god. Dragon Warrior, can you take this?”

The high priest handed over a ring. The ring was made out of platinum and embedded with a blue gem.

“This is something that one of the elder dragons, the Recorder Torres, left at the Dragon Temple 1,000 years ago.”

In-gong received the ring. Then miraculously, the size of the ring was reduced to fit In-gong’s finger.

“Shutra.”

Felicia said in a somewhat uneasy voice. However, In-gong smiled reassuringly at her. The ring was a relic of an elder dragon. Until now, the relics of the other elder dragons had accepted In-gong as soon as he touched them. It was as though they had been waiting to be conquered.

In-gong exchanged one final glance with Carack before putting the ring on his index finger. At that moment, he heard a man’s voice in his head.

‘I am the Recorder Torres.’

In-gong was in the dark, and he heard the voice coming down from a high place. He raised his head and saw a huge dragon’s head with beautiful white scales.

‘The magic was triggered, just like with Ainkel.’

In-gong sensed it intuitively. This wasn’t a conversation. It was a one-sided notification, like a recorded video. Torres’s voice continued speaking,

‘There isn’t a lot to tell. I don’t know how long it has been or what is going on. Therefore, this story will be brief. Many thousand years ago, the civilizations, which had been rooted in the Demon World, were destroyed. The records were destroyed and history was lost. It was an evil red serpent god who destroyed the world. The Red Dragon of the Apocalypse— The beast who sings for the end of days.’

The ground started burning, and a huge presence emerged. It was a red dragon with seven heads and ten horns. The presence of the red dragon itself was a huge catastrophe. Just by spreading its wings open, it seemed to cover the sky, like a shadow bringing death to the earth.

‘The fight from thousands of years ago ended with failure. The Red Dragon died as well. But it was difficult to say that it was a victory. Civilization was destroyed, and only a handful of species were left to build up a civilization again. The preceding elder dragons were wiped out. So, the world had to be built up from scratch again.’

No species had a history longer than 10,000 years. The oldest records belonged to the dark elves who had only preserved 7,000 years. The elder dragons were all dead, and there was a new generation of six elder dragons. They were the six elder dragons whom In-gong knew.

‘And yet, they remained.’

In the darkness, there were four flames of different colours. The white Conquest, the red War, blue Death, and black Famine.

‘They are called the Four Riders of the Apocalypse... Those who craved for the end of the world along with the red dragon.’

They didn't disappear. It was only the red dragon who was gone.

'The elder dragons, including myself, knew that the other riders would always be back. Finally, they returned after thousands of years.'

Torres showed some records of the past, and In-gong sensed that it was 1,000 years in the past.

'Violent Kaltein was the first to suffer a fatal injury. It was due to an attack from one of the strongest and fiercest of the four riders, War. With only one fight, Kaltein lost almost all of his power.'

In-gong remembered Kaltein's lair. There was evidence of fighting where the language of the indigenous species was carved.

'The next one attacked was Watcher Ainkel. But her case was different from Kaltein.'

'Conquest. She was in the fight.'

Torres' voice was filled with emotion, but it wasn't hatred toward the enemy.

'I fought with Ainkel against Conquest and War. It was a fierce battle, but we were finally defeated. I suffered a fatal injury, and Ainkel couldn't avoid dying. But shortly before dying, Ainkel said something to me. I could also feel it in the course of the fight. Conquest didn't want the destruction of the world. She didn't want civilization to be erased from the world once again. Conquest mourned the destruction from thousands of years ago.'

In-gong's heart throbbed. The appearance of the white woman, deep in his soul, came to his mind. It felt like when he was fighting the Famine Knight.

'The Great Enkidu didn't believe Ainkel and my words. The Cruel Talia also said that we were misled by the wicked enemies. Just as we want to protect the world, the riders want to bring about the end. It is their instinct.'

The record which remained at Thunderdoom Fortress... The four riders were going against the six elder dragons.

‘But I wanted to believe it. No, I had to believe it.’

Ainkel had faced Conquest head on. Torres himself felt the Conquest’s sorrow. Torres took a deep breath, then he spoke with heavy fatigue,

‘Soon, there will be a big fight. It is a big fight between the elder dragons and the Four Riders of the Apocalypse. I will face Conquest in that fight. And with the soul of Ainkel by my side, I will free Conquest.’

That fight had been 1,000 years ago. And since that fight, the elder dragons had disappeared from the world. The Great Enkidu abandoned his lair, and the Cruel Talia disappeared. The Guardian Queian faded into the background of history.

‘I will need to risk my life. Maybe I’ll fail, but I think it is worth it.’

Torres smiled. That smile was really warm, and it resembled that of Watcher Ainkel’s.

‘I don’t know what happened later. I am a recorder. Thus, although I know the past and present, it is impossible to get a glimpse of the future which has infinite possibilities. But I will make a prediction.’

Torres gazed at the sky as his voice shook the entire world.

‘This record won’t be transmitted to anyone else. But I also hope that it will be transmitted. If this record isn’t transmitted, then it means the first fight against the Riders of the Apocalypse ended in our complete victory or our elder dragons were defeated. The fact that this record was passed on means that Conquest was liberated from her fate of ending the world.’

Torres looked at In-gong again. However, Torres was no longer a huge dragon. He was now a white haired youth wearing loose robes.

‘Conquest Knight, the fact that this record was communicated means that the fight didn’t end in either side’s victory. The fight between the Four Riders of the Apocalypse and the elder dragons has been postponed to the future.’

That was indeed the case. After a thousand years, the knights who followed the will of the Riders of the Apocalypse had appeared.

‘Conquest Knight... one who wants to maintain the world, not one who craves the end. Even if the gamble is successful, I don’t know what Conquest’s state will be. Maybe she can’t even communicate properly with you. Gather the equipment of the elder dragons. Become a Conquest Knight and Dragon Warrior. The fight in the future won’t be a direct confrontation between the riders and the elder dragons but a fight between the Knights of the Apocalypse and the dragon warriors. If you have the strength of both then you can surpass the other Knights of the Apocalypse.’

In-gong could understand this, and he now realized...

The reason why the equipment of the elder dragons had been conquered as though they had been waiting for him, and the reason why Ainkel’s soul and dragon heart embraced In-gong. This was the process of becoming a Conquest Knight and Dragon Warrior.

‘It is time. This is the last record. Conquest Knight, I pray for your victory. And Conquest, I will be fighting you soon.’

Torres stared at In-gong and saw the white woman within In-gong. Although it was just a recording and there was no interaction between the two, In-gong could feel Torres’ gaze. The white woman was no different.

‘I hope you have been freed from your prison. Don’t be sad anymore.’

Torres smiled. In-gong felt the emotions of the white woman; sadness and joy flared up violently within him. Then the young man disappeared, and beyond the darkness, there was a huge white dragon.

‘I am the Recorder Torres. My record will end here.’

Torres turned back and vanished into the darkness.

However, In-gong was able to see it—Conquest’s memory. She recalled Torres’ end. He had smiled at Conquest until the end. Watcher Ainkel and the Recorder Torres... They were the ones who had liberated Conquest.

[The level of Conquest has risen.]

[The level of Conquest Knight has risen.]

[Armament has been acquired.]
[Dragon Warrior Lv1 has been learnt.]
[Dragon Words Lv1 has been learnt.]

In-gong closed his eyes and listened to the voice of the white woman from deep in his soul.

The War Knight looked at a deep hole in the ground.

It was a place which the species of the Demon World called outside the limit line. The area outside the limit line was an abandoned land which used to belong to the indigenous species.

The War Knight laughed, and it was like the fire of War. In front of the War Knight, there was the body of a huge white dragon. It didn't seem dead, and the War Knight knew its name.

He had directly witnessed the fight 1,000 years ago. Since that day, the dragon had been a hateful enemy he would never forget. Since the War Knight first awoke again, he had been searching for it.

The War Knight could feel the emotions of War, and like the red flames, she sang with a violent anger.

The Recorder Torres, the cursed elder dragon who had corrupted Conquest... For a moment, he had tricked her into being sympathetic toward her enemies.

Conquest was the leader of the riders. The riders had lost her and scattered. Even now, after they had woken up again, War was separate from Death and Famine. She could only feel them dimly. It was a terrible feeling of loss. The biggest sadness was that Conquest was no longer with them.

Then the War Knight discovered that his apostles had vanished and that the Conquest Knight had intervened.

The War Knight had been with War for over 1,000 years. Therefore, it was fair to argue

that the War Knight was War.

The Recorder Torres' soul had died 1,000 years ago on that day. The body before him now was just a shell.

War caused a huge fire which burnt Torres' body. The War Knight stared at the flames and went into deep thought.

Death's plan was underway. It wouldn't be long until the separate pieces of the plan that the Death Knight had laid out carefully would come into fruition.

The War Knight left the hole.

He stepped beyond the Northern Limit Line toward the land where the Death Knight was located.

Chapter 171

Gathering

A thousand years ago, there had been a big fight. No matter how good the fight was, the result didn't necessarily benefit them.

'No, as a matter of fact, it was our defeat.'

The Great Enkidu remembered that day. It was an unforgettable day.

Enkidu had taken down Famine. He had smashed that lowly rat, but Famine wasn't destroyed. Enkidu succeeded in hitting his essence, but that was all. The rat had lost his power and ran away.

Guardian Queian had fought against Death, but he hadn't won either. Both Death and Queian had suffered critical damage.

The Cruel Talia had struggled as well. If only her opponent hadn't been the hateful War... She would have won if it had been against Famine or Death. However, her opponent had been War. The most brutal one among the four riders had overwhelmed Talias. If the 'event' had occurred a little later, Talia would have died.

The Recorder Torres had caused the incident. So, Enkidu didn't know what Ainkel's soul and Torres did. The result was what had been witnessed.

Conquest and Torres destroyed each other. However, Enkidu, who dealt with the power of destruction, was able to see it. Conquest's and Torres' forms of destruction were different in nature. The destruction of Conquest was destruction for renewal. Torres had attempted to break Conquest and let her be reborn again, away from the other riders.

The idea was absurd, but the plan was partially successful. He didn't know if Conquest was truly liberated, but it seemed like it.

'Silly bastard. Stupid bastard.'

The price was too big. Ainkel's soul, which remained beside Torres, disappeared. Her soul was lost forever.

Torres' case was even worse. He had been destroyed. His essence itself was broken and scattered across the world. Queian couldn't accept Torres' ruin, but that was just desperation. Torres had died. No, it was more than death.

After that, it was chaos. He fought against the raging War. Death and Queian destroyed each other's essences. Enkidu couldn't remember the end of the fight clearly. He had been exhausted at the end of a long battle, and when he recovered his spirit, everything was over.

Then Enkidu realized... The Four Riders of the Apocalypse and the elder dragons had been destroyed. Since that day 1,000 years ago, both could no longer exist in the world like they done in the past.

However, the fight wasn't finished. It was just delayed.

Talia had escaped in a weakened state and fallen asleep. Enkidu himself had gone into a deep sleep. Queian had said before he fell asleep that after waking up, the fight wouldn't be a direct confrontation between the Four Riders of the Apocalypse and the elder dragons.

The ones who would decide the fate of the world would be the four knights selected by the riders and the dragon warriors with the power of the elder dragons.

Dragon Warrior... One who received strength from the elder dragons...

'I will reproduce the first dragon warrior... Drakon Kechatulla.'

These were the last words Queian left behind.

Drakon Kechatulla had been the strongest dragon warrior who preceded the elder dragons, and he had played a decisive role in defeating the Red Dragon of the Apocalypse. 10,000 years ago, when the red dragon and the older elder dragons had been annihilated, he had died as well. However, his blood was still being transmitted through one species.

‘Warrior.’

A miracle had been born among the humans—an incarnation of the first dragon warrior.

Enkidu lifted his head to the sky. Everything in the world seemed so far away.

‘Dragon Warrior.’

There wasn’t just one warrior. The Conquest Knight was one as well. Thanks to Torres’ sacrifice, Conquest had been reborn in the world and chosen her knight.

Enkidu recalled the story that the War Knight had said when he appeared before him. He remembered the rude provocation of War, who had just woken from a deep sleep.

What would be the result of the fight?

The Great Enkidu gazed far away. He looked at the land in the north, beyond the limit line.

In-gong opened his eyes and saw the white woman alone in the darkness. She was inside In-gong’s head. She was a woman with white hair, and her red and blue eyes were gentle.

In-gong now knew that...

She had been destroyed on that day 1,000 years ago and born again. As a result, she escaped from the fate of ending the world. However, it wasn’t a complete liberation. She was resisting that will even now.

Conquest wasn’t complete. The evidence was that she couldn’t converse with In-gong, despite being in the depths of his soul. Why was she resisting the end of the world? What made her reject the reason for her existence?

In-gong looked at the white woman. She smiled and stroked In-gong’s head gently. Then In-gong closed his eyes. The white woman’s touch was warm, and he wanted to sleep comfortably under her gaze.

However, he opened his eyes again. This time, it was in reality, not his consciousness.

“Oh, Prince. You’re awake?”

As soon as In-gong opened his eyes, he saw Carack’s face. He had just been looking at the white woman, so In-gong had a gloomy expression on his face.

“Why isn’t it Felicia or Green Wind? Maybe even Delia or Karma.”

He would rather see a beauty than Carack as soon as he woke up.

“Haha, you sound disappointed.”

Carack clicked his tongue, but he was smiling. In-gong smiled as well and raised his upper body, then he saw that he was in a large room with a stone bed.

“This is the Dragon Temple. Prince was asleep all day. High Priest said not to worry since it isn’t a big deal, but... are you really okay?”

Carack looked In-gong up and down. Although his face was still ugly, it was good to see his concern for In-gong.

“I’m fine. I feel very refreshed.”

“Then here is some cold water to wake you up.”

Carack laughed and handed him a glass of cold water. The inside of the Dragon Temple was very cool, unlike the outside which caused one to perspire just from walking a little bit. In-gong drank the cold water and looked around slowly. The ring of the Recorder Torres was glowing on his index finger.

The fourth equipment of an elder dragon... The ring was called El Ragra. Unlike the other three equipment In-gong had obtained so far, this wasn’t used in direct combat. It was instead a secondary support equipment. In-gong stroked the gem on the ring. It felt warm like Conquest’s touch.

It was at that moment that he heard a voice outside the door.

“Drakon Kechatulla, the great dragon warrior.”

It was the voice of the high priest. In-gong nodded and Carack opened the door.

“High Priest.”

The high priest had appeared exactly when In-gong had awoken. Moreover, there was someone else standing behind him.

“Shutra!”

Felicia smiled excitedly as she ran over and shook In-gong’s arm.

“Hey, hey. This place is really great! It is full of extremely old records! Ah, why have I only come here now? It would have been nice if I’d known of this place earlier.”

‘Indeed, Felicia.’

Although it was an ancient ruin, the Dragon Temple itself was a valuable archive. The high priest looked at Felicia like she was a young child and explained with a warm smile,

“Princess has been looking around the Dragon Temple. It seems like she really likes the records room.”

“Yes, yes, it’s the best. I’ve been there all day, but I want to stay longer.”

Her voice was dripping with a lingering attachment. In-gong’s mood improved when he saw Felicia’s pleased appearance and then playfulness rose inside him.

“Huk, what the? So, you left me unattended here all day to go somewhere else? Even though I was unconscious?”

He gazed at Felicia with disappointment, and she blinked, looking confused and embarrassed.

“Huh? Ah... no, that...”

The high priest had said it was okay. In-gong had looked like he’d just be sleeping, and

Carack had said he would stay. Delia hadn't been worried either and thought that seeing the records room would be a good diversion.

However, Felicia couldn't babble anything out. As she gazed around and couldn't figure out what to do, a new voice interrupted.

"Master. I kept staying beside Master. Isn't that good?"

It was Green Wind who had become solid. In-gong stroked Green Wind's head and said,

"Yes, you are nice, Greenie."

"That's right. I am nice. Princess is bad."

Felicia became more perplexed by Green Wind's words. She looked so cute that In-gong found it hard to hold back his laughter. Carack clicked his tongue.

"Prince, stop acting like this. And Princess, don't worry. Prince is just playing."

At Carack's words, Felicia's eyes widened, and she started hitting In-gong with her fan. In-gong just laughed along with Carack. It was a common sight, so In-gong's party was used to it. Delia, who had accompanied Felicia, coughed and they stopped their game. After releasing Green Wind's solid state, In-gong faced the high priest.

The high priest said,

"Dragon Warrior, I've prepared a meal. It will recover your strength."

It had been a good story. However, instead of accepting the meal, In-gong asked something else.

"High Priest, there is one thing I want to ask you before that. Do you know about the Dragon Words magic?"

It was something In-gong had acquired after seeing Torres' memory. He had a new secondary occupation of Dragon Warrior...

And Dragon Words was a skill of that occupation.

The high priest smiled pleasantly at In-gong's question and explained,

"Drakon Kechatulla. Finally, the dragon warrior has returned. I will happily lay the foundations."

"Dragon Words is a powerful magic that dragon warriors can use."

After the meal, the high priest guided In-gong to a large room with nothing in it and explained in a calm tone. Felicia, Delia and Karma, who could be called the magicians of the party, sat in a corner of the room and gazed at him with excited expressions.

Carack was also curious about the dragon warrior.

The high priest continued,

"Dragon Words is the mysteries created by words. It uses the power of language to create power in the world. There is a famous story that the magic in the Demon World originates from Dragon Words. The power that only dragons could use was re-assembled so that other species could use it."

It was a story In-gong had heard in Knight Saga.

"But magic relies on the strength of the magic power. It is a precise formula that can create miracles. According to the records, the great dragons of the past enjoyed using the newly created magic."

In-gong nodded. The few dragons he encountered in Knight Saga had used magic in addition to Dragon Words.

"Dragon Words can be called raw magic. Compared to the magic that has been refined over many years, it is rugged and simple. But there is one thing that distinguishes it from ordinary magic."

Felicia's eyes shone with curiosity. The high priest spoke slowly, giving Delia time to write it down.

“Drakon Kechatulla, the dragon warrior, Dragon Words contains your feelings and will. Even if it is the same word, depending on how strong your feelings and willpower are, you can emit a totally different force. Depending on the caster’s thoughts, the form of that power can change as well.”

In-gong was reminded of Locke’s techniques. In Knight Saga, some of the unique spells Locke could use were influenced by his emotions and will.

The high priest took a big breath and pointed to himself.

“It is weak but dragon blood also flows through me. Thanks to the knowledge inherited from my ancestors, I can speak a few words.”

Dragons learnt to use their words naturally, just like birds knew how to use their wings. However, those with a dragon’s blood were different. They couldn’t speak the dragon words until they realized they could do it.

“Dragon Words is close to innate power. Dragon Warrior, you are much closer to a dragon than I am, so you will soon learn the trick.”

It made a lot of sense. Moreover, In-gong was also the Conquest Knight. So, he was confident that he could learn it.

“Drakon Kechatulla, I will now teach you Fire Breath, which is the basics of Dragon Words.”

“Fire Breath?”

“That’s right. As the name suggested, you will pour out a breath of fire. But Dragon Warrior, the name isn’t important because Dragon Words is the expression of power and will. It is important to secure the best image of fire and put your will in it. I will demonstrate once.”

The high priest grunted, turned in a direction where no one was present and exhaled. At the next moment, he exclaimed in a loud voice,

“Fire Breath!”

Shortly after the high priest shouted, a strong breath of fire poured from the high

priest's mouth.

"Fire Breath is one of the most basic Dragon Words. Fire itself is easy to imagine as it is the power of primitive destruction. It is common to learn Ice Breath or Wind Breath after becoming accustomed to Fire Breath."

In-gong nodded silently. He thought he could do it, even though he had only seen it once.

"Drakon Kechatulla, would you like to try it once? You don't have to shout Fire Breath. Just form a solid image of fire with a strong will behind it."

'Fire Breath.'

There was only one thing left to do. Shutra took a deep breath and opened his mouth slowly, speaking his first Dragon Words.

"Prince, what is that fire?"

"Well, it is like it seems."

Chapter 172

Gathering #2

“Prince, what is that fire?”

“Well, it is like it seems.”

In-gong responded lightly to Carack’s puzzled question. He used Dragon Words directly like the high priest had said. It was possible to use it without speaking words, since it was transformed and reinforced through the will and emotions of the user.

‘In short, it does what I want.’

He realized why the dragons continued using magic despite the Dragon Words. Dragon Words was a tough and crude power. It was more convenient to use magic for various purposes.

‘But...’

It was definitely strong. Moreover, it was easy to use during close combat because it moved through his will.

‘It goes along with Dragon Style. No, I feel like I’ve come to know the true use of Dragon Style.’

If Dragon Words was putting will and emotion into magic, Dragon Style was putting will and emotion into aura. That’s why he became aware. His understanding of aura had become stronger.

In-gong looked at his status window for a while before investing most of his remaining skill points into Dragon Words. Dragon Words Lv4...

Although it was lower than the level of aura, which was close to 10, In-gong’s main strength was aura, not magic. Furthermore, Dragon Words was a higher concept of magic. So, Lv4 wasn’t that low.

“Okay.”

In-gong nodded lightly and used Ice Breath and Wind Breath. It was almost the same as Fire Breath, and it wasn't difficult because the level of Dragon Words was now higher. The high priest's eyes widened as In-gong used two more types of Dragon Words after succeeding in Fire Breath. He forgot the majesty of his position as high priest as he smiled with admiration and confusion.

“Indeed, Drakon Kechatulla... you acquired Dragon Words so quickly. You are truly blessed.”

The situation was similar to how it had been with Fire Breath, but Ice Breath and Wind Breath were different. The high priest had told In-gong of their existence but never taught them.

“A scam.”

Felicia spoke like had she witnessed something absurd, but she was smiling. It was a very proud expression. She laughed while covering her face with her fan and then spoke in a coy voice,

“High Priest, Dragon Words isn't the only thing that Shutra can do. Do you know he can shoot Dragon Breath?”

“D-Dragon Breath?!”

The high priest was dumbfounded. Despite his majestic atmosphere, he was impressed like a child would be.

“Yes, he can also use Dragon Fear.”

Felicia added and the eyes of the high priest shook. He breathed deeply before looking back at In-gong. Then the high priest gulped and asked,

“D-Don't tell me... Drakon Kechatulla, are you actually a dragon?”

That would explain why he had learnt Dragon Words so easily. Felicia laughed.

“High Priest, that isn’t possible. Shutra is a gandharva. Well, it is true that he is amazing.”

If Chris were there, he would be asking, ‘Why is Noonim acting so proud?’ Unfortunately, he wasn’t in the Dragon Temple but in the far north of the Demon World.

Carack laughed instead of saying something, while Delia, Felicia’s aide, was happy and had no intention of stopping it. In the end, In-gong coughed with embarrassment and told the high priest,

“High Priest, I am a gandharva. Also... can I learn the rest?”

“I understand. I will do so.”

The high priest replied and enthusiastically demonstrated more dragon words.

It had been one month since In-gong’s group arrived at the Dragon Temple.

In the heart of the temple, surrounded by a large collection of books, In-gong closed his eyes and concentrated. He had learnt six Dragon Words in the past month. Although he had learnt them instantly, he needed time to master them.

This was his first long vacation since opening his eyes in this world. He had never stayed more than one month in one place because he had always been wandering around here and there. Of course, it wasn’t really a vacation. For this month, In-gong didn’t just train in Dragon Words but all his techniques:

Aura; magic power; divine power; and psychic power. Compared to the previous two, psychic and divine powers were lacking, but everything still had room for a lot of improvement.

In-gong took a long breath to calm his impatience and thought about something else.

‘Warrior Locke.’

He was obviously a dragon warrior, the Drakon Kechatulla raised by Guardian Queian.

‘I wonder if he is an ally.’

In Knight Saga, Locke had been an enemy of the Demon World. Most of Zephyr’s subordinates had died at Locke’s hands. It had also been Locke who had taken Vandal’s life. However, he had never attacked first. It had just been a fight against the Demon World’s invasion.

‘It would be best if he became an ally.’

Locke was strong. He was the owner of a unique SS rank weapon and SS technique. So, it would be reassuring if he was on the same side. However, the future of having him as ally wasn’t certain. After all, In-gong himself was a prince of the Demon World. It was unknown if Locke, a patriotic warrior of the Human World, would cooperate with him.

‘I have to take advantage of my training in this temple.’

Locke’s adventure in Knight Saga had started in the Summer of Year 514. There was more than a year left until Locke would leave for his adventure.

In-gong focused his consciousness on his dragon heart. Ainkel’s magic power was warm.

‘Locke is the Dragon Warrior. Then what is Zephyr?’

Zephyr was a dragon humanoid, but that was because he was a draconian. He wasn’t a dragon warrior. Zephyr Ragnaros...

He was already special. He was recognized as the strongest royal child of the Demon King’s Palace and led one of the three major factions. However, it was the same in Knight Saga. In Knight Saga, he was the worst prince in the Demon World.

Warrior Locke wouldn’t be exactly the same as he was in Knight Saga, but he was still a dragon warrior and the enemy of the Four Knights of the Apocalypse. If so, wouldn’t there be something about Zephyr? Did he have any connection with the Four Knights and the Four Riders of the Apocalypse who were longing for the end of the world?

In fact, it was an unfolded speculation. This world wasn’t exactly the same as Knight

Saga. The surface history and personal history of the characters were almost the same, but it was up to there. Many things had changed since In-gong first opened his eyes in this world. The Four Knights of the Apocalypse, who hadn't appeared in Knight Saga, were causing incidents in various places.

Although Zephyr was the main character of the Demon World in Knight Saga, that didn't mean he had a connection with the Four Knights of the Apocalypse.

However, why? Something told In-gong that there was a connection, and his intuition was good.

'It is unfounded.'

Zephyr was already an enemy. So, it was an honest speculation to add something else. In-gong shook his head slightly. Then at that moment, he heard a voice from behind him.

"Shutra! Really, is concentrating on training all you need to do today?"

It was Felicia. Her temple outfit was a little more comfortable today. Not only were there coloured jewels shining from the gold ornaments, but she was also wearing a headdress made of large bird feathers.

In-gong instantly checked the clock at the corner of the mini-map.

"There is still a lot of time left. It isn't a good thing to become older."

Today was the last day of Year 512. In a few hours, it would be Year 513.

In the Demon King's Palace, he would become older every time his birthday passed. However, the Demon World had various species, and not everyone counted their age the same way. There were a few species who increased their age by one year at the beginning of each year, and the dark elves were one of these species.

Felicia narrowed her eyes as she stared at In-gong.

"Uh, what? A 14-year-old is complaining about getting older?"

Felicia wanted to grow up quickly. In-gong nodded at Felicia's words.

“Isn’t Noona the same?”

“I’m not.”

“Then what?”

Felicia responded with a coy smile.

“Shutra, Noona is only 18 years old. I still have a long time to go before I am afraid of getting older. So, stop training and get ready quickly. The high priest is conducting a ceremony to celebrate the new year. This is the duty of the royal family.”

For dark elves who lived for hundreds of years, 18 years old was a young age.

“Yes, yes. I understand.”

In-gong replied playfully, no longer discussing a woman’s age.

The new year celebrations were held outdoors. The lizardmen priests had built an altar in front of the entrance of the Dragon Temple and lit a large fire. The flames seemed so bright that it was like another moon had emerged.

The priests moved around the altar. The high priest stood before the great fire and poured Dragon Words toward the sky—a blessing. The priests sang along to the words of the blessing. It was a sacred hymn filled with divine power. Magic power and divine power tangled together and danced into the night sky, becoming a light shining among the stars. The light grew, and in accordance with the great cry of the high priest, it divided into hundreds and embellished the night sky. It was like a spectacular fireworks display.

Felicia blushed as she stared delightedly at the colourful feast of light. In-gong, who was equally impressed, turned his head and looked at Felicia.

It had been barely six months since they had first met. However, they had been together quite a lot. He had been together with her since their first meeting during the Red Lightning tribe mission. In-gong remembered that first moment he encountered Felicia. He had used his body to defend her from a fire arrow cast by an orc magician.

‘I hadn’t been thinking at the time.’

Thanks to this, his relationship with Felicia had deepened. In-gong closed his eyes for a moment, then something popped into his head. It was the Felicia’s death which he had seen in Knight Saga. He felt horrible just imagining it, and his breathing became rough.

“Shutra?”

Felicia’s gaze turned to In-gong. Her eyes were asking why he was acting like this, but she was still smiling. In-gong just laughed. The horrible sight in his head cleared as he said,

“Noona, I’ll protect you.”

‘No matter what happens, and by all means.’

Felicia blinked at In-gong’s words, then she opened her fan.

“What are you saying all of a sudden?”

However, her voice was very pleased. She fanned herself a few times before shrugging.

“Although... good. You are reliable. Why am I feeling so relieved?”

Felicia smiled widely behind the fan before quickly correcting her expression. Instead of saying anything more, In-gong laughed and looked up at the night sky.

The Year 513 began...

And the Demon World side of Knight Saga had begun. After spending 10 more days at the Dragon Temple, In-gong headed to the 12th base because Anastasia had called him.

While In-gong spent more than a month at the Dragon Temple, Anastasia and Victor had recaptured most of the western and northern parts of Curtis.

The morale of the rebels was very low. The rebellion had turned over the moment the Paran clan rejoined the Demon King's Palace. As expected, the western barbarian king, Actius, had chosen to escape, instead of fighting. He returned to beyond the limit line as fast as the wind. Actius' rapid departure destroyed the morale of the rebels completely, and they were on the verge of collapse.

In the case of the central fortress battle, Actius could be called the secret to suppressing the rebels.

Of course, among the rebels, there were still those crying for war. It was difficult for them to survive even if they surrendered. Post-battle work included disposal of the ones who surrendered and suppressing the remaining rebels. All of these were mixed up, and there wasn't enough time in a month. It would need a few more months to completely clear up the situation in Curtis.

In the midst of this, Anastasia had called In-gong and Felicia, but it wasn't for a task.

"There is a command to return to the Demon King's Palace. We can't postpone a direct report about this uprising any longer."

As soon as the cleaning up of the Red Lightning tribe was over, he had returned to the Demon King's Palace. So, this situation wasn't much different.

Anastasia, who he hadn't seen in a while, was still graceful, but there was fatigue in her voice which she couldn't hide. Felicia gazed at Anastasia with anxious eyes and asked,

"By the way Unni, are the transportation formations restored yet?"

"Not yet. So, Silvan is coming in his flying ship. He will arrive in two days."

If Silvan was coming with a flying ship, that meant it could only be the Black Flame Dragon. He had filled it up with crew members at the territory of the dark elves. Anastasia smiled while Felicia's face turned red. There seemed to be an envious edge to her smile.

"Victor orabeoni will stay in Curtis to stabilize the situation. This time, only the three of us will return to the Demon King's Palace."

There were a few reasons for Victor to stay behind, but In-gong didn't ask. He could guess the reasons to a certain extent.

Two days later, the Black Flame Dragon with Silvan on board arrived at the 12th base.

"Felicia! Your dear Oppa is here! Won't you kiss me on the cheek? Two or three times will be good!"

"Ah, come on!"

Chapter 173

Gathering #3

“Fe-li-ci-a!”

As soon as they boarded the Black Flame Dragon which had settled at the 12th base, they encountered Silvan’s excited face. Silvan showed a remarkable speed, even by In-gong’s standards, as he hugged Felicia and turned her round and round.

“Felicia! Your dear Oppa is here! Won’t you kiss me on the cheek? Two or three times will be good!”

“Ah, come on!”

Felicia tried to push Silvan away, but it didn’t work. Felicia, who was blushing from embarrassment, suddenly made a complicated expression before turning and kissing Silvan’s cheek.

It was a brief one. That was it, but the effect was amazing.

“Heok? F-Felicia really kissed me!”

Silvan was embarrassed, despite asking for the kiss, and didn’t know what to do. Felicia grinned at his overwhelmed appearance and kissed Silvan’s cheek again.

“Okay, are you satisfied now?”

Silvan blinked in shock at Felicia’s question. It wasn’t the normal flow which occurred around Silvan and Felicia.

“A-are you sick? Is this a gift for the new year?”

Silvan asked with sincere worry, and Felicia just laughed.

“It’s not like that. It’s just that sometimes, I think it’s good to do this.”

Despite everything, she only had one brother. Moreover, it must never be said again, but she had been worried. Felicia never forgot about Silvan. When she thought about what had happened on that day, she could kiss his cheeks a few more times.

“Please stay healthy in the future. That is the best gift for me.”

“F-Felicia.”

Silvan was moved to tears, and Felicia smiled as she touched his cheeks. Then Anastasia, who had been staring at the two of them, let out a long sigh.

“This is embarrassing to watch. You two, there are other people on the ship...”

Anastasia’s cheeks were red from embarrassment. As Felicia became aware that she and Silvan were not alone, she hurriedly pushed him aside. This time, Silvan released Felicia instead of holding onto her tightly.

“Anastasia noonim.”

“Silvan.”

As Silvan and Anastasia exchanged greetings, Felicia spread her fan and covered her face.

“Well, the ‘two people’ have changed now, with Silvan still being one of them.”

She muttered in a small voice, but there was no one listening. In-gong laughed at the festive atmosphere and approached Silvan.

“It is good to see you, Hyung. Is your body okay?”

“Thanks to you, it was very good.”

Silvan was still wearing an eyepatch over his right eye. It wasn’t for sealing the fairy like before, but for camouflage. If he stopped wearing it suddenly, people would be suspicious. The existence of the fairy itself had been a secret. As he shook hands with In-gong, Silvan wriggled his eyebrows up and down.

“Hmm, the atmosphere with Anastasia noonim isn’t bad.”

“Yes.”

It was definitely a much better atmosphere than at Baikal’s tea party. Anastasia had been angry at the transfer of Felicia and Silvan, making her quite hostile toward Shutra.

“Shutra is truly amazing.”

Silvan mumbled before dragging In-gong into a hug. It seemed like Silvan quite liked showing affection.

“Silvan, I’m sorry to say this as soon as you arrived, but can we head back straight away?”

Anastasia asked Sepira, who was standing behind Silvan and shaking her head with embarrassment.

“Noonim, it is difficult no matter how I look at it. My crew needs some time to rest. We can depart in a few hours. This is better for safe piloting.”

Originally, Silvan would’ve entered Anastasia’s faction with Felicia. Therefore, his relationship with Anastasia was quite good.

“Then it can’t be helped.”

Anastasia backed down without any stubbornness. Waiting a couple of hours wouldn’t make a huge difference. It was at this moment that there was a voice in In-gong’s head.

‘Shutra, can I share information with Anastasia noonim? It is news about our other brothers and sisters.’

In-gong coughed with a surprised expression. He heard a voice in his head, indicating it was message magic.

‘Silvan hyung, have you learnt message magic?’

Due to fear of the fairy running wild, Silvan had lived by building a wall around magic,

not using it at all. So, he was someone who couldn't even use basic magic. Yet he had just used message magic. It had only been two months, so it was indeed amazing.

'Huhu... Shutra, it is natural. Now, I am a magic swordsman... a magic swordsman from the heavens.'

His face was so handsome that he gave off a charming atmosphere despite his words. In-gong coughed again and barely managed to control his expression, focusing his mind on answering the first question.

Sharing simple information with Anastasia...

That wasn't a bad thing to do. At first glance, Silvan seemed like the kind to not think about anything, but ultimately, he was still a prince of the Demon King's Palace. If he hadn't intended to share information with Anastasia, he wouldn't have said anything in the first place.

'I think it should be fine. I believe that Hyung will filter any important information.'

'Thank you for believing in me.'

Silvan thanked In-gong with his eyes before looking at Felicia and Anastasia. He had been looking at In-gong silently for a long time, so both Felicia and Anastasia wondered what Silvan would say. Silvan shrugged and said in a pleasant tone,

"This time, I came to pick up the three of you because I got a return order."

"Silvan as well?"

Anastasia asked with a frown. It was the first time she had heard of this. Anastasia, In-gong, and Felicia were to return to the Demon King's Palace to report on the rebellion in Curtis. In other words, there was a reason to receive a return command.

However, why had Silvan received a separate return command? Felicia thought it was strange as well. The separate commands weren't just for moving the party to the Demon King's Palace. Silvan's eyes shone with satisfaction from their reactions.

"It isn't just me. Chris and Caitlin received the command to return."

“The two of them as well?”

“Yes, the two of them.”

Silvan responded lightly to Felicia’s question before looking at Anastasia, who narrowed her eyes. Then she opened her mouth after some slight hesitation,

“Silvan, was Baikal orabeoni also asked to return to the Demon King’s Palace?”

Six of the nine royal children had been ordered to return. With the exception of Victor, who had a definite reason to remain in Curtis, it was natural to ask if Baikal and Zephyr would return as well. However, Anastasia couldn’t hide the expectations in her voice. Silvan shrugged and replied,

“Noonim, I’m sorry, but I know that Baikal hyung-nim doesn’t have a return order. There is a rumour that Baikal hyung-nim and Zephyr hyung-nim will soon receive a relocation order.”

“Relocation?”

“It seems like they don’t have to go that far. If they had to move to a distant place, then it would be better to go through the Demon King’s Palace.”

The Demon King’s Palace was connected to all the major parts of the Demon World through the transportation formations. If they were moving to a place other than the north, it would be much faster and more efficient to pass through the Demon King’s Palace.

“Uhh... doesn’t the flow seem similar to the last time?”

Felicia frowned and asked. It was similar to the court gathering where all the children of the demon king had gathered together. In-gong had a similar idea. Anastasia nodded as well.

“Maybe... they are trying to position all the children of the demon in the north. That would explain why a return order hasn’t been issued to Baikal orabeoni.”

It would be faster to move from the north to somewhere else within the north, rather than going through the Demon King’s Palace. Felicia bit her lip and turned toward

Anastasia.

“Unni, are you talking about the Aegis Gate?”

“If all the children of the demon king were being sent to one place, it would be there.”

Anastasia’s voice and expression became overcast. At that moment...

“Master, what is the Aegis Gate?”

Green Wind appeared in reality and asked In-gong. Felicia had already become accustomed to Green Wind’s intrusions, but Silvan and Anastasia weren’t. Silvan stared at Green Wind with curiosity, while Anastasia replied in an elegant voice,

“It is the absolute line of defense in the north of the Demon World.”

“Absolute line of defense?”

Green Wind looked back at In-gong. Instead of answering, In-gong turned Green Wind back in Anastasia’s direction. He was going to leave the explanation to Anastasia. Anastasia smiled like she liked Green Wind and added,

“The Demon World is incredibly huge. Due to that, the area that we call the north is quite vast.”

Baikal and Zephyr were active in the north, and Enger Plains, which could be called Green Wind’s hometown, also belonged to the north.

“Silvan, can you show me a map?”

“Of course.”

The crew members immediately responded to Silvan’s command to bring a large map. It was a map of the Demon World.

“The Aegis Gate is the northernmost area of the north. It is the region with the most battles.”

Anastasia pointed to the very top of the map. Felicia subsequently said,

“Green Wind, the limit line near the area where Unni is pointing is special. The strength of the barbarians and creatures there is superior, and their numbers are enormous. Aegis Gate is the name of the fortress which was built to stop the enemies in the north.”

Aegis Gate was an absolute line of defense. Anastasia opened her mouth again and said briefly,

“500,000.”

“500,000?”

Green Wind’s eyes widened. Then Anastasia responded,

“That is the number of barbarians who passed away during the Great Invasion 12 years ago. Abamama... at that time, the demon king headed to the north himself.”

The scale was completely different from the west and the east. Green Wind had spent almost all her life at Enger Plains, so she was shocked at the number.

Felicia added,

“The attacks of the creatures couldn’t be ignored. Apart from the barbarians, the creatures also caused a considerable headache. There are some incredibly strong or huge monsters which can be considered an army on their own.”

It was the same in Knight Saga. If other regions were in normal mode, the vicinity of the Aegis Gate was hell mode.

“Master, do we have to go to such a place?”

Green Wind asked in a voice which was filled with concern. She disliked the thought of In-gong being in danger. In-gong stroked Green Wind’s head and said,

“The Demon King’s Palace pays careful attention to the Aegis Gate. Isn’t it called the absolute line of defense? It is as the name suggests. It is a place where the captains are often present.”

One of the reasons why the Demon King's Palace couldn't dispatch the five army captains everywhere was the presence of the Aegis Gate. The four commanders, except for Reinhardt who served as the demon king's guard, usually served at the Aegis Gate for a quarter of the year.

"Ohh, I wonder if there are signs of an invasion?"

"I don't know."

Silvan stroked Felicia's head with an expression of regret. Once again, Felicia showed no signs of pushing him off. Anastasia folded her arms and said,

"Even if there isn't a big invasion, it is a place where big and small battles never end. The group attacking all over the Demon World may be aiming for the Aegis Gate this time."

The Death Knight and the War Knight... In-gong agreed that the possibility was high. However, at that very moment, Green Wind blocked In-gong's mouth with her hand.

"Master, don't say it. Master's words have a strong effect, so you definitely shouldn't mention it."

In-gong couldn't help laughing at her desperate voice. Felicia shrugged and responded,

"Yes. Isn't that quite plausible?"

The heavy atmosphere lightened to a certain extent. Then Anastasia let out a large sigh and said,

"I have received one piece of information."

"Unni?"

Anastasia leaned back against a wall before replying lightly,

"There is a rumour that Altesia, the saintess of the Erebus Church, will soon be in the north."

“The saintess of the Erebos Church?”

Erebos, god of the night and darkness, was the god of the most powerful religion in the Demon World. Silvan patted Felicia’s head again.

“Felicia, don’t worry. Oppa thinks that Felicia is much more beautiful than the saintess.”

“Oh, come on! That isn’t the point!”

Felicia pushed Silvan’s hand away and said to Anastasia,

“If the Dark Saintess is moving, then the Knights of Erebos are also moving. Is something really happening in the north?”

It really seemed to be true. Anastasia replied with a frown,

“For now, it seems to be a sick visit. They are moving around with making any noise and are visiting several places.”

There were believers of the Erebos religion everywhere in the Demon World. They couldn’t ignore the possibility that the visit to the north was simply to console those who were ill.

“Orc, what do you think?”

After hearing Felicia and Anastasia’s conversation, Green Wind suddenly directed a question to Carack. Carack’s eyes widened at the sudden question while Anastasia cocked her head. Felicia saw Anastasia’s reaction and quickly opened her mouth,

“It is worth listening to Carack’s opinion.”

Anastasia made a strange sound. Felicia was familiar with Carack, since she had been together with him for a long time. However, Anastasia felt uncomfortable at the fact that he was an aide as well as an orc. Despite this, Felicia’s intervention sparked curiosity, rather than displeasure, in Anastasia.

As Felicia sighed in relief, Carack pondered for a moment before saying,

“Hrm, I can only think about Prince’s position. So, for now, I don’t think Prince should be worried about the situation in the north.”

“Then?”

It was a fairly fresh opinion, so all eyes focused on him. Carack shrugged and replied,

“We are returning to the Demon King’s Palace. There will also be a court gathering. I am more worried about what will happen there.”

There had never been a court gathering which passed quietly. The previous court gathering, which had been the quietest one, was an unexpected event with the visit of the 3rd and 4th queens.

“Yes. Indeed, Carack, your words are correct.”

Felicia smiled and nodded, and for some reason, Anastasia agreed.

“Indeed, Disturbance Shutra is famous. It is the new specialty of the Demon King’s Palace. Hrm, I am full of expectations now.”

Until now, she had been watching from a distance. There was a slight difference between then and now.

“Well, we will all know once we return to the Demon King’s Palace.”

In-gong ended the conversation easily, and everyone nodded. In particular, Silvan clapped and exclaimed in a loud voice as he looked up at the sails of the Black Flame Dragon.

“Now, lift up the anchor and spread the sails! It is time to move to the Demon King’s Palace!”

He shouted nicely, but the Black Flame Dragon didn’t move. In the silence, Sepira muttered in a small and embarrassed voice,

“Your Highness, the departure time is in two hours.”

Silvan had set it himself. After a moment of silence, Anastasia smiled, while everyone

else burst out laughing.

The sunshine was dazzling. After escaping from the caves which were a buffer zone between the Human World and Demon World, the youth smiled as he saw sunlight for the first time in a week.

The young man wasn't handsome. Rather, he was more on the plain side. However, there was something about him which caught one's eye. It was a type of charisma he had been born with.

He had blackish brown hair and sky-blue eyes. His face was one which showed his youth. Maybe it was more appropriate to call him a boy, instead of a young man. He wore armour made of dragon scales and held a sword filled with divine power. Accompanying him, there was also a beautiful young girl and a middle-aged man with complicated expressions on their faces. Fatigue, relief, fear, and curiosity about the unknown were displayed openly on their faces.

The Saintess Beatrice and Mercenary King Carlov...

They were heroes of the Human World and experts in their respective fields. The young man looked back to the front, then he took a deep breath and smiled.

"Now, is it the Demon World from here on out?"

Warrior Locke—

The Drakon Kechatulla who had been raised by Guardian Queian...

He had reached the Demon World.

Chapter 174

Battle

The wind blowing from the limit line was cold and dry. However, those on the battlefield didn't feel that cold. A much colder and ruthless breath swept through the battlefield.

Chwaaaaah!

The ice-filled dragon breath poured down from the sky. Even a zombie drake wouldn't be able to resist a direct hit from it. The air around them froze and shattered into pieces. The sight of 20 zombie drakes being frozen and destroyed in an instant was truly spectacular. The Dragon Breath spread out in a fan shape to cover dozens of meters on both ends. It was like a natural disaster. The aftermath of the cold air influenced the atmosphere on the ground, and the cold air seemed to turn their blood cold.

The owner of the breath was the ice dragon, Quanta. She was an evil dragon in the vicinity of the Northern Limit Line. Covered with blue scales, she burned with a violent anger. It wasn't just anger at those who dared to challenge her; the anger contained an impatience and anxiousness which couldn't be concealed.

"A breath was shot out! Bypass!"

A soldier outside the range of Dragon Breath shouted. As an orc and junior general, he couldn't even dream of being a match against a dragon. However, he was now facing a dragon, and he wasn't alone. There was a leader!

Brig, the junior orc general, sped up on his boar as he stared at Quanta. Following him, there were dozens of soldiers with crossbows.

Papapapapak!

There was the sound of arrows penetrating the cold air, but it was unreasonable to pierce a dragon's scales with crossbow bolts. The difference in size was too big. Brig

knew that, but it wasn't useless.

"Pay attention and disperse! Bother it!"

The soldiers fired the crossbows again. It was the same with the units deployed on the other side. 300 cavalry members fired crossbows in different directions, filling the sky with arrows. The ice dragon, Quanta, felt annoyed. She flapped her wings and used Dragon Words, scattering the arrows with a strong gust of wind, while a rain of icicles fell onto the cavalry.

Screams burst out as one group of the cavalry was practically wiped out. However, Brig smiled despite his fear. He looked at a place above Quanta's head.

Kwa kwang!

A huge explosion occurred above Quanta. It was the power of the energy shots fired by the wyvern strike force. Quanta, who had been attacking the cavalry on the ground, couldn't escape the energy shots, and the explosion on her back pushed her down to the ground. The length from her head to tail ran for hundreds of meters, and her weight was also terrifically heavy. The earth shook when Quanta fell, and the frozen ground cracked and broke.

"Trivial things-!"

Quanta burst out. The cavalry with a relatively close proximity to her couldn't withstand the fear and collapsed. However, there were those who weren't affected. The wyvern strike force once again used the energy shots, and there was a deafening roar as the explosions covered Quanta's head. Smoke emerged and disturbed the soldiers' view of Quanta.

"Noohm!"

"Aim for the throat!"

The cries of Quanta and the intermediate general Paragra rang out at the same time. On the left and right sides of Quanta, several huge harpoons were fired. They were terrible objects with a length of seven meters.

The harpoons were trump cards which had been hidden before the battle began.

Quanta instinctively felt a sense of urgency and cast a defensive spell using Dragon Words, but it was useless. The army had no intention of piercing Quanta's scales in the first place.

"Curve!"

The soldiers instantly used Telekinesis. The harpoons, which had been flying in a straight line, changed course around Quanta's neck. They circled Quanta's neck repeatedly, trapping her neck with the thick chains at the ends of the harpoons.

Quanta was confused. The demon king's army hadn't broken, and Paragra, who was also a powerful magician, commanded the magicians to cast their spells. 20 magicians aimed spells at the chains.

"Kuaack!"

Quanta screamed as chains coiled around her neck, and there was now a different magic running along those chains.

The combination of water-based magic and lightning magic created a powerful synergy. There were curse magic, to lower Quanta's magic resistance, and amplification spells, to amplify all the magic. Even the ice dragon, Quanta, couldn't hold out against all of this.

Quanta shrieked. In the meantime, new chains were wrapping around her neck.

"Pull!"

There was no magic in the new chains, but frost giants were holding the ends of these new chains, and all of them were undead. The frost giants, who had been in hiding previously, rose up at the same time and pulled the chains with tremendous strength. Quanta screamed as her head was forced to the ground.

The wyverns fired their energy shots again. Their purpose was to prevent Quanta from using magic by distracting her. However, Dragon Words was different from normal magic. Quanta's scream soon became magic, and the violent spell Dragon Words created surrounded the chains with a strong chill which was Quanta's very essence. Just as the magic of the soldiers reached Quanta, her cold was also running along the chains!

The frost giants, holding the ends of the chains, froze in an instant. The magicians casting a different type of magic suffered considerable damage as well. It was an expected attack, so they rushed to avoid it, but almost half the people were swept away by the cold.

However, that didn't stop the army. The ballistas used for destroying gates and giant monsters hit Quanta's back. Attacks were aimed at her body constantly.

Quanta felt a sense of crisis. She couldn't determine the number of soldiers from the demon king's army, nor did she have any idea of how much preparation had been put into this battle. However, she knew it had been a planned encounter, and that she needed to escape.

Quanta's body trembled as that thought popped into her head. She couldn't bear the shame and anger...

However, she had to run away. Despite being battered by attacks, Quanta focused her mind. She used Dragon Words to change her appearance, and her body shrank by hundreds of meters as she became a gandharva female with blue hair. This was the usual appearance that Quanta enjoyed. The chains which had been wrapped tightly around Quanta's neck loosened instantly. The attacks simply hit the ground with the loss of their target.

Quanta gasped for breath and prepared to use a spell to fly into the sky.

Then at that moment... Someone approached her through the bombardment. Quanta felt his presence when the distance between them was less than 10 meters. That was how fast his movements were.

"Ka! Ramus!"

The person moved forward boldly. It was the roar of Dragon Style. Quanta had shrunk. Her blue eyes saw a red man, with red hair and eyes, and a sword in his hands. Even though she was currently in the form of a gandharva, he was using Dragon Style to try and defeat a dragon.

She knew it the moment she saw this man. This person... He had planned all of this. He had used the army to push Quanta into a situation where she needed to transform

into a gandharva. It had been for the purpose of reducing her size so he could attack her!

Quanta pulled out a sword like lightning from the air. It was a sword created from her teeth. However, the man in front of her—Zephyr, who was called the strongest magic swordsman—was faster. He raised his sword instantly and blocked Quanta's. It wasn't a simple sword. Quanta was able to tell the moment their swords collided. The common power of a draconian wouldn't be able to win.

Quanta reinforced her muscles using aura, while her body was strengthened by magic. There was also the addition of Telekinesis! As she moved her arm which held the sword, Zephyr didn't slow down and wielded his sword in rapid succession. Quanta's sword-holding hand was cut off and thrown into the air.

Quanta shrieked as blood spurted out like a fountain from her arm. Her blood had a sweet scent, but that was because she had shifted to a gandharva. She went on to try casting several spells at the same time. Her scream was filled with enchantment magic. It was powerful enough to force the one wielding his sword at Quanta to put his sword down and beg for forgiveness.

Quanta would buy some time with this enchantment. Then she would transform into something more warlike, instead of a gandharva. However, all of this was just a wish. Her opponent wasn't enchanted. Zephyr must have a mental resistance beyond imagination as his expression didn't even change.

Zephyr's left hand dug into Quanta's abdomen. His uniquely sharp draconian nails ripped through Quanta's abdomen easily. Quanta wasn't used to feeling pain. She screamed once again, but this time it wasn't Dragon Words.

Zephyr exploded the aura in his left hand and wounded Quanta's insides. He didn't forget to use the various curse scrolls hidden in his magic pockets. Once Zephyr pulled out his left hand from her abdomen, cursed blood poured out.

Zephyr didn't stop there. As he pulled out his left hand, he swung his sword and cut Quanta's neck. He deliberately used enough strength to only make her bleed.

"Cough!"

Quanta covered the wound on her neck with her one remaining hand. Now, she

couldn't even scream, so Zephyr was satisfied. After the consecutive strikes, he pushed off against the ground and did a sharp spinning kick. Quanta couldn't endure it. The world seemed to be turning upside down, and her back soon struck the ground.

As Quanta squirmed on the ground, Zephyr's knee held her down. He broke her ribs instantly and pressed against her heart. Zephyr then used Telekinesis to strike Quanta's hand which was covering the wound on her neck. He put away his sword and grabbed Quanta's neck with his right hand, whispering as he poured magic power into her.

"This is going to be painful. But don't give in too quickly. If you can't endure this much, you won't be worthy of being my subordinate."

Quanta's eyes widened. What was he talking about right now? Become his subordinate? She who had reigned over the earth for 700 years like a god? She couldn't say it. The miserable scream in her throat was suppressed before it could emerge.

In the meantime, Zephyr continued his work. A spell of obedience was spoke at the same time as he used Telekinesis. The seven swords Zephyr carried on his back flew into the air and fastened her arms, legs, abdomen, and the rest of her body to the ground. The different elemental spells, which had been stored in advance into the swords, tormented Quanta.

It was a gruesome attack which would have killed an ordinary gandharva dozens of times over already, but Quanta was a dragon. So, she didn't die. She just felt tremendous pain which made her feel like she was dying.

The soldiers of the demon king's army watched as Zephyr overpowered Quanta. Most of them had grown up on these lands, so they knew about Quanta. She was famous for her strength and being a disaster from the sky. Yet that Quanta was now being suppressed.

Everyone was overwhelmed by Zephyr. They admired him and understood why he was called the most powerful prince of the Demon King's Palace.

There was also someone who was thrilled in a manner different to the soldiers.

War... One of the Four Riders of the Apocalypse. She watched Zephyr through the eyes of a warrior. The amount of darkness inside Zephyr was enough to cause her pleasure.

War had seen everything. Zephyr had used his soldiers to hunt Quanta. He showed a precise and thorough insight. Aside from his individual strength, he was also perfectly capable of commanding soldiers.

It was attractive. Then War came to a conclusion. That was Zephyr Ragnaros... The 2nd Prince of the Demon King's Palace, the most powerful prince. Both his soul and body were tough. War now understood why Death was paying attention to him.

'It is more than enough. That man can do it.'

War shook with pleasure once again. She was in just as much awe as the soldiers while she watched Zephyr make Quanta submit to him.

At that moment, one of the swords stuck in Quanta's body was pulled out and flew at a fast pace. The cheering soldiers focused on Quanta didn't even notice the sword had struck someone's neck. The same was true for War's warrior. He couldn't react and lost his head. The head of War's servant then fell to the ground.

The connection was closed; War could no longer look at Zephyr. However, she still felt a great joy. The last thing she saw before the connection was broken had been the face of Zephyr, who was staring at War with cold eyes. He had an intense aura and magic power wrapped around him.

She was thrilled. Zephyr was beautiful, charming. War liked what she saw, and she desired it.

In the darkness, she lifted her head. She could feel something in the south, heading toward the War Knight in the north.

Guardian Queian... It was the Drakon Kechatulla he had prepared—a human warrior.

There was also another one, the Conquest Knight with the power of a dragon. He was a child of Conquest, who had been corrupted by the hateful Ainkel and Torres.

War smiled faintly. The time was approaching.

“Master, the talking raccoon has become a pig raccoon. Fat.”

“No? I just became slightly overweight from relaxing and sleeping a little bit!”

Chapter 175

Battle #2

After leaving Curtis, In-gong's group was able to reach the Demon King's Palace in 10 days. It was an incredibly long time compared to using the transportation formation, where they could move in the blink of an eye. However, according to Sepira, they arrived quite quickly. She stated she had been able to reduce the time by two days thanks to good weather.

There was a welcoming crowd at the flying ship airport, with a very good face at the front of the crowd.

"Shutra! Felicia unni!"

"Caitlin!"

As the stairs of the Black Flame Dragon were laid out, Caitlin spread her arms open, and Felicia hurried down the stairs. Then Caitlin dragged Felicia into a hug like she couldn't wait anymore. The two of them had become really close since the Red Lightning tribe event. Caitlin buried her face in Felicia's chest before approaching In-gong and opening her arms. Caitlin's intention was clear, so In-gong hugged her. As In-gong was now taller than Caitlin, it was no longer awkward for him to hug her.

After a short hug, Caitlin looked up at In-gong's face.

"I've heard the story. Weren't you very active this time?"

Her golden eyes seemed to shine like lanterns. In-gong felt better and asked,

"Yes, Noona. Aren't I amazing?"

At In-gong's implicit request, Caitlin's eyes widened but only for a moment. Then she smiled brightly and shouted,

"Amazing!"

The darkness in In-gong's mind dissolved. It was like cleansing magic being used on the undead.

'Hu, I have to admit it. The Amazing Princess is really amazing.'

Green Wind admitted defeat in his ears, while Felicia covered her face with a fan and laughed.

"Noisy."

An elegant voice interrupted the bright and lively atmosphere. Caitlin looked up at Anastasia who was slowly descending the stairs.

"Anastasia unni."

Caitlin's voice subsided somewhat because their last encounter at Baikal's tea party hadn't been particularly good. Chris spoke on behalf of Caitlin,

"Anastasia noonim, I heard that this time was pretty dangerous."

The sociable atmosphere instantly disappeared, replaced by tension. Then there was the loud sound of clapping, and Anastasia smiled slightly instead of snarling.

"It was dangerous. If it wasn't for Shutra, I might not have returned to the Demon King's Palace again."

Chris frowned at her words. He had to admit that he was confused. Meanwhile, Anastasia finished descending the stairs and looked at In-gong.

"Shutra, I'll be going first. I'll see you later. Felicia, Silvan."

Felicia nodded from beside Chris, while Silvan, who was still on the Black Flame Dragon, winked with his eye which wasn't covered by the eyepatch. Other people would think he just closed his eyes, but Anastasia knew Silvan and understood him immediately. She smiled and turned toward Caitlin. Caitlin blinked as she received Anastasia's attention, but Anastasia smiled again and spoke first.

"Caitlin as well."

It was just a few words, but it was sufficient. Caitlin laughed again before Anastasia stepped forward gracefully. Her followers and her aide, Chandra, lined up behind her. Chris watched Anastasia's exit quietly, then he said to In-gong,

"Hasn't Anastasia's attitude become softer? Did Shutra do something else?"

"Only what was mentioned."

In-gong replied lightly, making Chris look toward Felicia for a further explanation. Felicia just said with a prudish expression,

"Well, it is a story for later. Let's move on."

Chris laughed and raised his hand to In-gong's shoulder.

"Um, you gathered here so naturally that I can't say anything."

The children of the demon king were gathered in the reception room of In-gong's mansion. It was a gathering of Shutra's faction, consisting of the 5th Prince, 6th Princess, 7th Prince and 8th Princess. For example, it was common to scatter to their own mansions after returning to the Demon King's Palace. However, this time, they had all gathered at In-gong's house very naturally.

Chris said with a shrug,

"Shutra is our focal point. There is no better place to discuss things than your mansion."

Among the children of the demon king, it was Chris who In-gong hadn't seen for a long time. Chris seemed to have many pent up stories. However, he couldn't listen to Chris' story straight away. It had been quite a while since In-gong had returned to the mansion, so there were a few things he need to do first.

"Master, the talking raccoon has become a pig raccoon. Fat."

Green Wind said with a frown as she solidified next to In-gong. Amita, who had gotten

a slightly bloated, hit the ground with their tail. Although their tail was raised, the sound was softer than before.

“No? I just became slightly overweight from relaxing and sleeping a little bit!”

“Raccoon, don’t deny reality. You can’t even run as usual.”

“Sob.”

Carack’s brutal assessment caused Amita to grab their chest. In-gong glanced at Daphne, who was behind Amita, to ask what happened, but Daphne just shook her head with a sad expression.

“Anyway! I created many things in the meantime. I will show it later.”

Amita said with a grunt. In-gong nodded as he visualized Amita’s diet plan in his head.

“I understand. I have a lot to show you, so please look forward to it.”

“What? Did you get your hand on another item of an elder dragon?”

Amita asked with confusion. In-gong nodded again.

“There is also this.”

The Giant King’s Sword and Lizardmen’s Horn. Both of them had been made by the indigenous species 10,000 years ago.

“Hah, truly... you have the luck of a god. How is it that every time you go somewhere, you manage to sweep up all the goods?”

“I don’t know about good luck, but I have a guardian.”

In-gong stroked Green Wind’s head from where she was sitting next to him. Of course, Green Wind was good but...

Unfortunately, Nayatra wasn’t present in the mansion to share her story. She had left the Demon King’s Palace more than a month ago to gather information. The task In-gong had entrusted to her had been to investigate the sin of the gandharva. However,

even if Nayatra was excellent in gathering information, it was unreasonable to expect her to figure it out in a month.

It was unavoidable, so In-gong turned toward Chris. This time, he intended to listen to Chris' story. However, right then, just as Caitlin was having fun pressing her fingertips to Amita's belly...

"Your Highness, the 4th Princess has come to visit you."

Flora entered the reception room and said in a quiet tone. It was an unexpected visit, so In-gong didn't know about it.

"Anastasia noona?"

Chris and Felicia were surprised. Felicia, who had a good relationship with Anastasia, nodded, but Chris frowned.

After a moment, In-gong replied to Flora,

"Flora, bring her to this room."

"I understand."

Flora left for five minutes and showed up again with Anastasia and Chandra. Anastasia sat down on the couch and looked at Chris who had a cold expression, Caitlin who seemed lost, Felicia and Silvan who had a relative calm expression. Then Anastasia said in a relaxed tone,

"Everybody is gathered."

"Did something happen?"

At In-gong's question, Anastasia turned her gaze toward Felicia.

"It is due to Felicia's urging. Didn't you say there should be a reward for saving me at the central fortress?"

She had said that clearly. Rather than giving a further explanation, Chandra handed Anastasia a small box with a small necklace inside it.

“Here.”

Anastasia handed the necklace to In-gong. In-gong was already wearing the Tears of a Dark Elf, which meant he would be wearing two necklaces, but it still looked presentable because both were very thin.

“Succubus... Tears?”

In-gong muttered the name of the item which popped up, and Anastasia nodded.

“It is similar to the Tears of a Dark Elf, but it’s different. By default, it has a strong resistance against mental attacks, but it also contains attraction...”

‘It is like a strong attraction drug. The effect is remarkable.’

The last part was sent through message magic. In-gong nodded automatically. The Succubus Tears was one of the so-called ‘tear series’, a great item which contained Anastasia’s attraction ability and defensive ability against mental attacks.

‘Wah, Anastasia is actually giving this to me.’

In Knight Saga, he had no choice but to defeat Anastasia. In order to do that, he had to defeat the succubus’ territory and take down the 2nd Queen Titania Nekrion.

‘Is this an item that can create a bizarre play?’

It was literally a love potion. In-gong touched the purple jewel at the end of the necklace and smiled. However, unlike In-gong, Felicia frowned as though she disliked it.

“Unni, the effect will overlap with the Tears of a Dark Elf. Isn’t there anything more helpful?”

“Don’t you think it is helpful enough?”

It seemed that Felicia wasn’t interested in the attraction effect. Then at that moment...

“Hoh, everyone is gathered here.”

A familiar voice was heard from the terrace. The first to react was surprisingly Anastasia.

“Sword Duke?!”

The sword duke, who had appeared out of nowhere, laughed instead of answering and opened the door to the terrace. He had appeared so suddenly that everyone was perplexed. In particular, Chris and Silvan were so surprised that they were almost frozen.

Anastasia was the first one to recover. She hurried to cover her armpits, but it was too late. The sword duke took one step and was already right in front of her nose.

“Kuk!”

The sword duke’s big hands went underneath Anastasia’s armpits. Anastasia struggled desperately and shouted,

“S-stop!”

However, he didn’t listen. The sword duke laughed and raised Anastasia up high.

“Higher! Higher!”

“S-stop it!”

Anastasia, who had always been graceful, shouted with a grouchy expression. She was spun round and round toward the ceiling as the hem of her dress spread out wide. After several rounds, the sword duke set Anastasia down, and she staggered. The sword duke clicked his tongue.

“You liked this when you were a child... You’ve changed, Princess.”

“I didn’t like it when I was a child!”

There was no elegance this time. The sword duke clicked his tongue again before moving his gaze. Felicia noticed where he was looking and shouted urgently,

“W-wait a minute!”

Felicia wasn't much different from Anastasia. She was grabbed by the waist and spun round and round in the air.

“Put me down! I'm telling you to put me down!”

Felicia struggled like how Anastasia had done, but the sword duke didn't budge. After a while, Felicia landed on the ground in a similar manner to Anastasia earlier. Felicia then sat down on the ground and muttered complaints about the sword duke.

The sword duke laughed at the two princesses and turned to Caitlin. Unlike the previous two, Caitlin actually welcomed the sword duke.

“More!”

The laughing Caitlin exclaimed as soon as she was put on the ground. It was a pleasurable response, but the sword duke's expression only changed subtly.

“Well, I'm glad that you are happy, but... I feel like it is less exciting.”

The sword duke finished patting Caitlin's head and turned toward the princes this time. Silvan opened his arms in anticipation, while Chris watched the sword duke. Fortunately or unfortunately, the sword duke only greeted the two princes.

“It is nice to see you. I'm glad that both of you seem healthy.”

“I greet the sword duke.”

“M-me too.”

Chris and Silvan responded hurriedly. After finishing the very brief greeting, especially in comparison to the greeting with the princesses, the sword duke finally looked at In-gong.

“Sword Duke, did something happen?”

There had to be a reason for his sudden appearance. The sword duke took a deep breath and looked at In-gong with his unique and penetrating gaze.

"I heard about Curtis. So, I was wondering how much you've grown."

After finishing his test, the sword duke crossed his arms and laughed at Anastasia.

"It wasn't in the direction I expected, but... you have definitely become stronger. Additionally, your performance in the military was quite good. I am looking forward to the court gathering."

"The court gathering?"

They had heard that the court gathering would occur three days later, at the earliest. He felt a strange feeling after hearing that the sword duke was looking forward to the court gathering. However, the sword duke didn't reply. He glanced at the panting Anastasia and Felicia on the floor and moved toward the terrace in the blink of an eye.

"It is great to see you with Princess Anastasia. Then I will see you at the court gathering."

The sword duke disappeared like the wind. In-gong opened the mini-map reflexively, but he couldn't find the battlefield. Indeed, the sword duke was a true hero of the Demon World. The reception room was silent, like the sea calming down after a storm had passed.

"Annoying."

Anastasia, who still hadn't regained her elegance, muttered, and Felicia nodded in agreement. It was a moment when the relationship between the sisters became stronger.

"Um."

Carack closed the terrace door and muttered in a low voice as he approached In-gong. Then Carack scratched his head and said,

"Prince, it is obvious that something is going to happen on the day of the court gathering."

"Yes."

In-gong leaned back on the couch and agreed. He couldn't help laughing.

“My appearance isn't a surprise.”

“The appearance of the 4th Queen is within the expected range.”

Chapter 176

Battle #3

Silvan, Felicia, Chris, and Caitlin returned to their mansions in the evening, with Anastasia at the forefront.

In contrast to what he had expected, Anastasia only left In-gong's mansion after finishing dinner. She noticed Chris' looks before and after the meal but continued as though she didn't care. Caitlin smiled because she thought it was an opportunity to get closer to Anastasia, but Chris was different. In Chris' eyes, Anastasia was just staying to spy on them.

Although his mood wasn't great, Chris didn't explain about what had happened on his mission. However, Caitlin briefly explained that he had done moderately well fighting against the creatures.

Anastasia was more curious about In-gong's life among the lizardmen than Chris' life. She knew In-gong and Felicia had stayed at the Dragon Temple, which could be called the sanctuary of the lizardmen, but she couldn't understand what they had been doing there.

In-gong just smiled while Felicia talked about the brilliant appearance of the Dragon Temple. It felt like the conversation at Baikal's tea party.

"The Dragon Temple seems amazing."

Although Caitlin seemed satisfied, Anastasia and Chris didn't look that good. Chris frowned while Anastasia hid her displeasure behind her elegant appearance.

"Let's talk again in the future."

In-gong said in a small voice to Chris, who was the last one to leave his mansion. When he was finally alone, In-gong sighed and looked up at the ceiling. Carack asked from behind him,

“Prince, what is it?”

“I still have a conversation left.”

Carack made a puzzled sound, but In-gong just headed upstairs. He didn't forget to give instructions to Flora whom he met along the way.

‘Master, you seem to be nervous.’

“Yes.”

In-gong took a deep breath in front of his bedroom door before opening it.

“Hello.”

“Hello, Your Majesty the 4th Queen.”

4th Queen Elaine Moonlight was sitting in a very comfortable position on In-gong's bed. She wore a blue dress with a narrow skirt, but it fit well with her dark blue hair.

“My appearance isn't a surprise?”

“The appearance of the 4th Queen is within the expected range.”

In-gong laughed bitterly as he closed his bedroom door. Without opening the mini-map, he could feel Ludwig's presence on the balcony. Elaine frowned slightly before smiling at him.

“Hmm, did you notice that I broke into your bedroom?”

“I am a little sensitive.”

In-gong responded appropriately as he stood before the window which led to the balcony. Elaine smiled once again since it was exactly opposite from where Ludwig was hiding.

“I heard about Curtis. Anastasia doesn't have the same personality as her mother. Well, no, to be precise, there are only several layers of bark on top of the egg... at least for now.”

“For now?”

Elaine nodded pleasantly at In-gong’s question.

“Isabella said so. You are an older sister killer. Don’t you turn your older sisters into fools?”

Elaine laughed like she found it very amusing, while In-gong gave a soulless laugh.

“Hah, how interesting. Anyway, there are several reasons for me to visit today. Can you come over here?”

Elaine patted the area of the bed next to her. As In-gong approached reluctantly, she pulled a necklace out of a box she had prepared in advance.

“This...?”

“This is the Lycanthrope Tears.”

It was a yellow jewel lodged in a wolf’s claws. This was the first time In-gong had seen it.

‘Is the Lycanthrope Tears also part of the tears series?’

A total of three tears had appeared in Knight Saga:

The Tears of a Dark Elf gave a powerful mental defense;

The Succubus Tears could create a love potion;

And the Draconian Tears restored the wearer’s magic power. Yet now, there was the Lycanthrope Tears.

‘Could it be that there is one for each queen?’

It was a moderately interesting story. In-gong was able to understand why this was the first time he had seen the Lycanthrope Tears.

In Knight Saga, Silvan had cut off Elaine's head. Zephyr hadn't participated in the lycanthrope subjugation until the end. Zephyr's purpose had been to wipe out the lycanthropes and weaken the other children of the demon king, not build up his own merits.

'Then is there a Gandharva Tears? Will something happen if I collect all five in the set?'

It was like a game idea, but it really seemed like that might happen.

'I'll need to check.'

If the Gandharva Tears existed, then there was a high possibility it would be with the remains of the 5th Queen.

"Shutra?"

In-gong raised his head at the voice he heard from right beside him. He turned toward Elaine only to see her face right before him.

"Is there a problem?"

"No, I was just a little surprised."

In-gong responded quickly and pulled back, increasing the distance with Elaine again. Elaine stared at In-gong before leaning toward him. Then she placed the necklace around his neck.

"The Lycanthrope Tears gives the owner a powerful regenerative ability. Have it. It will be very helpful."

Despite how small the three necklaces were, they stood out. He would switch all three pendants onto a single chain later.

'Is this why she said she would return before?'

Elaine had said she would return with something in exchange for killing Gerard.

"The next thing is about the court gathering."

Elaine frowned and changed the topic.

“At this court gathering, the 1st Queen and 2nd Queen are likely to participate. Sylvia is also participating. So, in fact, all the queens of the palace will be present.”

1st Queen Aishar Ragnaros and 2nd Queen Titania Nekrion... In-gong knew why Elaine wasn't comfortable. In Knight Saga, the relationship between 2nd Queen Titania and 4th Queen Elaine had been very bad. The two of them were an example of a cat-dog relationship.

“You have already experienced the court gatherings a few times, so it shouldn't be a big problem. Rather, the problem is the back issues.”

The court gathering was essentially a venue for publicity. Even though 3rd Queen Sylvia had appeared suddenly at the last one, it hadn't caused a problem to the process itself. It was after the court gathering that Sylvia's tea party invitation had appeared.

“1st Queen Aishar isn't a big problem. The problem is 2nd Queen Titania... She isn't the same as Anastasia. She is a really scary woman. Do you understand?”

“I understand.”

1st Queen Aishar had a similar nature to 1st Prince Baikal. She was very gentle and rarely left her mansion, spending most of her time on gardening and reading books. However, Titania was different. She was a thorny rose, a poisonous flower.

Elaine once again got In-gong's attention as she rose from the bed and looked down at him. She patted In-gong's head.

“I asked for Master Bruce to spar with you. Wait a little longer.”

“Yes, Your Majesty the 4th Queen.”

“Tsk, ts. Call me Mother.”

Elaine laughed as she embraced In-gong gently. She was similar in appearance to Caitlin, but unlike Caitlin, Elaine had more curves.

“Then that is all for today. I'll see you next time.”

Elaine touched In-gong's cheek gently before turning toward the balcony, instead of his bedroom door. Ludwig appeared like a ghost behind Elaine. Elaine's and Ludwig's exit wasn't as fast as the sword duke's, but it was faster than the wind. In-gong sighed as he stared at the open balcony doors.

"Why does the sword duke and everyone else not go through the door?"

In-gong murmured as Green Wind closed the balcony door.

Two days after the meeting with Elaine, Shutra's faction, headed by Felicia, gathered at In-gong's mansion. They intended to head to the court gathering as usual.

Felicia had many gold decorations on a blue dress which was as exposed as always, with her clothing being reminiscent of what she had worn at the Dragon Temple. Thanks to Chris' return, Caitlin wore a white dress which covered her shoulders. Chris smiled with pleasure, but Caitlin's frown showed she wasn't satisfied.

Silvan and Chris were wearing a colourful suit and black suit, respectively, as usual. In-gong was also wearing a white suit like he had always worn.

"Did you hear? There is a rumour that all the queens will be participating."

Chris' eyes sharpened at Felicia's words. He approached In-gong and said in a heavy tone,

"Beware of the 2nd Queen. Just watch the 2nd Queen."

His eyes filled with flames like Elaine. Seeing this, a smile found its way onto In-gong's face.

"What is it?"

"No, Hyung really is the 4th Queen's son."

Chris was still confused, but he didn't ask In-gong anything else. Felicia stood next to them and added,

“Shutra, Omamama told me to watch out for the 2nd Queen as well. Don’t just laugh like that and be careful. Understand?”

“I understand. Hyung and Noona don’t need to worry too much. Will the 2nd Queen be the only one at the court gathering? The 3rd Queen and 4th Queen are bound to help.”

Two of the four queens were on his side. 1st Queen Aishar was neutral, so she wouldn’t be an impediment. Chris laughed at In-gong’s words and knocked against his shoulder.

“Hu, okay. Disturbance Shutra. I will put aside my futile worries and proceed to enjoy the exciting court gathering.”

Chris was expecting an event to happen again. Felicia opposed it immediately.

“Hey, does it have to be exciting? Shutra, please let it be quiet this time. Noona’s heart hurts at every court gathering. Yes?”

Felicia grabbed her chest as she begged In-gong. She looked so serious that he was unsure if it was a joke or her true heart.

“Anyway, let’s depart. It will be a big deal if we are late.”

It was Silvan, the oldest member of Shutra’s faction, who said this. Chris smiled at the tone which made Silvan sound like an old man but prepared to leave. Just as they were planning to leave the reception room...

“Your Highness.”

“Flora?”

Flora approached at an urgent pace and bowed before In-gong.

“Your Highness, the court gathering scheduled for today has been cancelled.”

“Cancelled?”

Felicia cried out in an aghast tone. So far, the court gatherings had never once been

delayed or cancelled. It was surprising that the court gathering was cancelled on the day it was to be held.

Chris asked sharply,

“Tell us a little more. What is the reason? Was there some type of accident?”

“I don’t know the reason. I received the news from a guard.”

Flora was surprised by Chris’ intimidation, but she responded in a calm tone. The court gathering had been cancelled, and the reason was unknown. Moreover, it was the guards who had informed her.

Felicia and Chris gazed at each other with confusion. It was obvious the court gathering had been cancelled due to an incident, but they couldn’t even guess what had happened. Silvan and Caitlin were no different. Caitlin looked at In-gong with an expression of concern.

In-gong started thinking, and thought of something reflexively. If ‘that’ had happened, then it made sense. It would explain why the court gathering had been cancelled. However, the timing was too early.

‘Perhaps...’

In-gong shifted his gaze in the direction of the Black Castle, which was called the true Demon King’s Palace.

The demon king, Mitra, opened his eyes. He wasn’t on a comfortable bed. The demon king recalled the situation just before he lost consciousness.

“The court gathering was cancelled. The queens were quite confused. Well, this is the first time it has happened.”

The sword duke spoke in a low and heavy voice. The demon king shifted his gaze and the sword duke came into his sights. The sword duke opened his mouth to speak,

“Has your sickness worsened?”

The demon king didn't deny the sword duke's worried question, but his current situation itself was the answer.

He had vomited up blood and collapsed; he had lost consciousness. It was fortunate that the sword duke had been the first one to discover him. The demon king had concealed his illness even from his guard, Reinhardt.

The demon king of the Demon World had always been considered an absolute being. If the fact, that he had a disease and was in a weakened state, were exposed, then the hearts of the people, even the queens, might change.

The next demon king wasn't ready yet. Until a new absolute being appeared to guard the Demon World, he had to show a healthy appearance.

The sword duke clicked his tongue. He looked at his only disciple with sadness.

"Demon King, you don't need to rush. Are you going to die before this old man? If you do, then you better be prepared. I will never forgive you."

The sword duke spoke intently on purpose. The demon king smiled and raised his upper body slowly.

"Sword Duke, prepare to go to the Holy Land."

The sword duke's eyes widened at the command. The demon king could see the flow of destiny, so he wouldn't say this for no reason. It was clear that something would happen in the Holy Land.

"I understand. I will leave immediately."

Maintaining the Holy Land was the greatest task assigned to the sword duke, and it was related to the comfort of the entire Demon World. The sword duke prepared to leave the demon king's side, but then the demon king's magic grabbed the sword duke. The sword duke looked back with confusion and the demon king said,

"Not alone. Take Shutra with you."

"To the Holy Land?!"

The sword duke raised his voice unintentionally. It was a confusing order. The demon king turned his gaze back to the sword duke, staring at him with calm eyes. The sword duke sensed that the demon king had read the flow of destiny. So, he didn't ask any more pointless questions.

"I understand, I will do so."

The sword duke replied before leaving the demon king. The demon king's gaze lingered on where the sword duke had been, then he shifted his gaze to a distant place.

The flow of destiny was fluctuating.

Chapter 177

Battle #4

In-gong gulped. If it was as he thought... that meant the illness of the demon king had worsened, and he had collapsed.

‘So fast.’

In Knight Saga, the worsening of the demon king’s illness and the cancellation of the court gathering had occurred in Year 516. It was currently Year 513, so it should’ve occurred three years in the future. However, he couldn’t deny it. Things had already changed quite a bit from Knight Saga. Just looking at Zephyr, he was much stronger now compared to how he had been in Knight Saga.

‘The court gatherings haven’t been abolished yet.’

It had been cancelled just once. There was currently no need to assign a substitution like the demon king had done in Year 517.

“Shutra? Have you guessed something?”

Felicia asked suddenly. It was because In-gong was thinking with a very serious expression on his face.

All gazes shifted toward In-gong, who shook his head hurriedly.

“No, no. I don’t know.”

It wasn’t a complete lie. The cancellation of the court gathering might not be because of the demon king’s illness. Maybe it was something else which In-gong didn’t know.

‘I’d rather be wrong.’

The demon king had to stay alive. The longer his reign was, the more time In-gong had to prepare.

“Did something happen to Abamama?”

Felicia said in an uneasy voice. Just like how 3rd Queen Sylvia truly loved the demon king, Felicia loved her father as well. They really were a loving family.

“It can’t be.”

Chris denied the possibility immediately. It wasn’t simply because he didn’t want to hear such ominous words. It was because he couldn’t imagine a situation where anything was wrong with the demon king. For the children of the demon king, the demon king was an absolute being.

In-gong looked at other possibilities. Maybe it was a problem with the queens, not the demon king, which caused the court gathering to be cancelled. However, the possibility of that was low. From the beginning, the queens weren’t essential for the court gatherings.

‘Is it truly the demon king’s sickness?’

The moment that he thought so...

A heavy wind blew past. Everyone, including In-gong, turned reflexively. There was a strong presence they couldn’t resist. The sword duke was on the terrace, but it wasn’t like when he had showed up two days ago. The sword duke’s face was blank.

Silvan opened his mouth, but he couldn’t speak. Chris was the same. The strong aura of the sword duke dominated the surrounding area completely.

“Prince, you have to go somewhere with me right now. This isn’t an offer but a command of the demon king.”

The sword duke ordered. The children of the demon king gulped at the sword duke’s brief speech. Where was he going? And why did the sword duke look so serious? Was it related to why the court gathering had been cancelled?

“I understand.”

In-gong replied calmly. At that moment, Felicia tried to take a step toward In-gong, in

order to go with him as always. However, the sword duke didn't allow it. He instantly stopped everyone's movements, including Felicia. Felicia couldn't breathe. It felt like she was frozen by something. They were caught in the absolute power of the sword duke.

"It is only 9th Prince."

The declaration was like an absolute rule. Felicia gasped for breath, while Caitlin and Chris couldn't say anything. Silvan clenched his teeth and staggered toward Felicia. The sword duke was no longer looking at the children of the demon king. He only looked at In-gong as he spoke,

"Prince, excuse me for a moment."

The sword duke moved in front of In-gong instantly and raised a hand to his shoulder. In-gong accepted the sword duke's hand instead of resisting. He looked back at the restrained Carack before taking a deep breath.

Once again, a heavy wind blew past. No, it was better to say that wind was broken.

The sword duke's technique transcended imagination. As he held onto In-gong's shoulder, he crossed a vast distance in one step. The sword duke only stopped when they arrived at a transportation formation.

In-gong reflexively used the mini-map to check his location. They seemed to be near the Black Castle. The sword duke didn't explain as he triggered the transportation formation. Instead of asking, In-gong followed the sword duke onto the transportation formation.

The place where they arrived was inside a cave. It was an artificially enlarged natural cave, with a sura boy and girl standing in front of the transportation formation.

The sura boy and girl, dressed in the same clothes as the sword duke, were surprised to see In-gong next to the sword duke. However, that only lasted for a moment. They started speaking to the sword duke with desperate expressions. At first, In-gong couldn't understand, but he soon realized. It was the sura's native language.

'Is the Holy Land in danger?'

Was this the sura's sanctuary? The sword duke interrupted the boy's story. He looked at In-gong and said,

"Prince, you will now be entering the Holy Land. It can also be called the Sanctuary."

"Is this the sanctuary of the sura?"

The sword duke had mentioned earlier that his residence was the Sanctuary. In that case, did the sura have a problem? Perhaps the cancellation of the court gathering had something to do with the sura.

"There is no time. I will explain while moving."

The sword duke turned around and started to run. It was fast because they were moving a long distance, but it wasn't like when he moved at the Demon King's Palace. In-gong hurriedly caught up with the sword duke using Protection of the Wind. The sword duke watched In-gong closely before smiling and explaining,

'It is true that the place where I stay is the sanctuary of the sura. But it isn't just a sanctuary for the sura. It can be called the sanctuary of the whole Demon World.'

The sword duke's voice was directly conveyed into In-gong's head. It was a technique using aura, not message magic.

[Trill Lv1 has been learnt.]

He was happy to learn an unexpected skill, but now wasn't the time to look at it.

'My mission is to protect the Sanctuary. It is a lifelong task inherited from my master.'

The Sanctuary had been protected for generations. The sword duke continued to speak,

'Very few people know the location of the Sanctuary. Only a few of the queens and captains know the location. Even they don't know the true role of the Sanctuary. The Sanctuary isn't simply the home of the sura.'

The reason for the Sanctuary's location being known to some was to prepare for

possible attacks. However, according to the sword duke's words, it wasn't just for that. From the beginning, the Sanctuary had been a shield to cover something else.

The sword duke briefly stopped talking there. He then changed the topic instead of explaining the true role of the Sanctuary.

'The Sanctuary is now under attack. Prince will fight with me.'

There was always a reason for the demon king's actions. He didn't order the 9th Prince to go somewhere for no reason. The sword duke ran along a snowy field with In-gong. Snowy mountains rose like a wall in the distance. In-gong opened the mini-map, but he couldn't figure out his exact location. Even if the scale was increased as much as possible, only the snowy field could be seen.

"Prince, do you remember what I said before? The Demon King's Palace has always faced challenges."

The sword duke said abruptly. At that moment, In-gong felt the wind disappear. The snowy field he had been running on suddenly changed to grassland. In-gong realized that he had just passed through a ward. In-gong's gaze moved to a place far away. At the far end, a huge silver tower in the shape of a dome could be seen. Additionally, a fight was about to start on both sides.

"This is one of those challenges. A pretty big challenge."

The sword duke growled. In-gong gulped as he concentrated aura on both eyes and looked at the battlefield. He saw a familiar sight.

'Creature Abseltur!'

He was a formidable adversary which In-gong had always encountered when playing the role of Locke in Knight Saga. Abseltur took on the appearance of a dark elf, instead of a huge creature, and was sitting on a carriage pulled by two chimeras. On his left and right, there were hundreds of blood warriors who seemed to come from hell.

'It isn't just Abseltur.'

In the opposite direction was Arch Lich Shutenberg. He was the creator of Zephyr's subordinate, Sektum, and as an undead commander, he was more difficult than

Abseltur in many ways. In-gong took a deep breath. He felt a fighting spirit instead of fear. The sword duke was here, and In-gong was much stronger than he had been in Evian.

‘Master! The enemy!’

Green Wind exclaimed suddenly. In-gong looked up to see birds the size of a human body staring at him from the air. It seemed like they were Abseltur’s scouts which he had spread all over the battlefield. This was just before the battle, but there was still a considerable distance to the battlefield. In-gong sent White Eagle after them. He couldn’t allow their position to be exposed.

White Eagle shot forward and took care of the low-grade creatures in an instant. It was at this moment that...

[Your level has risen.]

“Eh?”

In-gong cried out unintentionally. He had gained a lot of experience from defeating Berkintox and Artman, so he had expected to level up sooner or later. However, he didn’t think it would happen just before a fight like this.

However, In-gong felt glad. Levelling up was always useful. Moreover, this level up had a different meaning.

‘Level 40!’

He could upgrade an existing occupation or obtain a new secondary occupation! Confronted with such strong enemies, it really was appropriate timing.

[You are at the junction of growth. Please select one of the following two paths.]
[Species Change: Dragon]
[Ancestral Regression: Divine Humanoid Gandharva]

The female voice rang out as letters of light appeared in front of him. It was an option for species selection, not occupation.

‘Divine Humanoid Gandharva?’

According to legend, the Eight Legions were divine beings living in the heavens. It was highly likely he would awaken that divine power due to ancestral regression. In-gong didn't think about it for long. He didn't have time to worry, but it also wasn't a matter to worry about in the first place.

He was arguably already a half-dragon. So, In-gong didn't feel the need to change his species to a dragon.

[You have chosen Ancestral Regression: Divine Humanoid Gandharva.]
[Ancestral regression has started.]

The clear voice was cut off. Simultaneously, a white light whirled around In-gong's body. This white light couldn't be compared to the light of blessing which appeared every time he levelled up.

“Prince?!”

The sword duke, who had been staring at Abseltur and Lich Shutenberg, let out a confused sound. It wasn't because Shutra was suddenly surrounded by a white light. The sword duke recalled the moment when Divine Sura Authority had been born. It felt like that time... It was a nice and creepy feeling which sent a shiver down his spine.

In the midst of the light, In-gong shrieked soundlessly. His whole body was hot, and a terrible pain seemed to be tearing his body apart as his head turned white. Green Wind shouted. Then he could hear the voice of the white woman.

In-gong forgot about the flow of time. He raised his head and roared loudly. The white light covering In-gong's entire body shot up into the sky.

[Four Heavenly Kings: Dhrtarastra Spirit has been acquired.]
[Heavenly Wine Lv1 has been learnt.]
[Divine Scent Lv1 has been learnt.]
[Pheromones Lv1 has been learnt.]
[Divinity Lv1 has been learnt.]

[The level of divine power has risen.]

[The level of divine power has risen.]

[The level of divine power has risen.]

[Protagonist Correction is activated.]

[Protagonist Body is activated.]

[The divine power of the last flame and the divine power of the Four Heavenly Kings have become one.]

[The level of Divinity has risen.]

One of the Four Heavenly Kings, the deity of the gandharva who protected the east... His blood flowed through In-gong's body. In-gong opened his eyes slowly. He didn't need to check his status window.

All his gandharva attributes had been strengthened. In-gong had been reborn as a divine humanoid with his own divinity.

Conquest and Protagonist Body had joined forces. The divine power of the last flame and one of the Four Heavenly Kings had been combined to create a sacred white flame.

'Master! Are you okay? Master has changed! You have become divine! A-and... more handsome?'

In-gong smiled at Green Wind's admiration. He mounted White Eagle on his left arm and looked in front of him.

The sword duke stared at In-gong before laughing. Instead of asking what happened, he just noticed that In-gong had become stronger.

"Prince, I will entrust the east to you."

The sword duke raced toward the west where Lich Shutenberg was. A number of senior undead were guarding Shutenberg, but they were nothing against the sword duke. So, there was no need to worry.

In-gong stared in the direction of Creature Abseltur. Some of the blood warriors around Abseltur noticed the abnormality and turned to this side. As In-gong closed his eyes before opening them again, the half-solid Green Wind appeared beside him.

‘Master.’

Green Wind said, and In-gong nodded. Rather than taking out the flag of light, he raised his hand to Green Wind. She was imbued with the power of Conquest.

‘Apostle Appointment, Green Wind.’

The white light surrounded Green Wind, and her power was increased by several times.

The small reindeer horns on Green Wind’s head grew much bigger. Her green hair was lengthened, and instead of clothes made of leaves and stems, she was wearing a white dress of light. The Conquest Coat of Arms on her forehead was clear.

The divine power around her was more than what he had felt when he first encountered her on Enger Plains. It wasn’t an exaggeration to call Green Wind a goddess of the wind.

‘Master.’

Green Wind kissed In-gong’s lips. After giving him a high class blessing and smiling shyly, she became the wind. In addition to White Eagle, she too stayed beside In-gong.

In-gong took a deep breath, then he rushed toward Abseltur’s army.

Chapter 178

Battle #5

Four types of power existed in Knight Saga.

One type of power was Aura. Aura was the power of life, a strength which could be used to train the flesh and master martial arts.

Another type was magic power, which allowed the user to temporarily impose false laws on the will of the world.

There was also psychic power—an innate ability which could be called a superpower.

The last type, divine power, was a strength which came from having a strong faith.

There was a story which told that if all four powers reached the ultimate stage, a perfect harmony could be created. However, that was just an ideology. Generally, it was common for the four powers to resist each other, instead of creating a harmony. However, Protagonist Body allowed him to repress that opposition. The power of Conquest did not allow for a quarrel between the four forces.

In-gong sensed the holy power in him increase by leaps and bounds. It felt like the divine power, given to him by the last flame, had grown at least five times stronger. Divine power itself could be called a miracle created by faith.

The stronger the faith of the believer, the stronger the god would be, which, in turn, strengthened the believer's divine power. Divine power was strong against magic power which created false miracles. Additionally, it boasted exceptional power against the various types of beings in the natural world.

‘Creature Abseltur.’

He was the worst creature ever created by the fairy king, the first fairy user. Abseltur had stood on the side of the dark elves many times, but then the fairy king, the only being able to control him, died. The third daughter of the fairy king, who had been in

charge of taking care of Abseltur, had been the first to be killed. Abseltur didn't stop there and completely destroyed several villages and cities.

The fairy king's eldest daughter, who had succeeded the throne, had been able to defeat him after making a great sacrifice. However, Abseltur had merely been defeated. Instead of being killed, he had been sealed. It hadn't been very successful, however, Abseltur had lost the strongest body created by the first fairy king because of the fight with the new fairy king.

Then thousands of years passed. As the Era of Struggle occurred, Abseltur repeated a cycle of a long sleep and awakening to create his new body. He used the corpses of various strong individuals and monsters during the Era of Struggle as the materials.

In-gong remembered the Abseltur he had seen in Knight Saga. It had been Locke and Saintess Beatrice who had completely exterminated Abseltur, who had been on the verge of recreating the strongest body.

'Anyway, the most important thing is divine power!'

Abseltur was a peculiar existence who was weak to divine power. Therefore Beatrice, who boasted the strongest divine power, was the key to victory.

However, In-gong did not care. Even if Saintess Beatrice or Dark Saintess Altesia weren't here, he could not avoid the battle in front of him.

In-gong adjusted his breathing. He figured out the number of enemies around them through the mini-map opened in front of him. Then In-gong shared his gaze with Green Wind in the sky and detected the movements of the entire battlefield.

Abseltur was sitting in his carriage and wasn't moving. The summoned blood warriors were the only ones moving. They divided into two. One group rushed toward the Sanctuary, while the other group ran towards In-gong. Of course, the numbers of the latter group were much smaller.

'Master! They are dismissing you!'

Green Wind cried out angrily, but In-gong didn't care. It was good if the other side was dismissing him. He didn't slow down his running speed.

“Katur!”

“Kelala!”

The blood warriors spoke in their own language. They weren't from this world and were instead demons summoned to fight. According to Knight Saga's setting, they were warriors in an endless war. The only thing they did, aside from eating and sleeping, was fight.

‘How are they allies?’

In-gong was troubled by the fact that they had been summoned from another world. He stared at the blood warriors. They were all red. Although their bodies were different, all of them had an average height of three meters and sharp horns on their heads, shoulders and back.

Just before In-gong was about to collide with them, the heat from their breathing touched In-gong's cheek. This was because the blood warriors produced flames from their long tongues. In-gong pulled back his right fist. His stance was just like he was pulling out a sword, but there was no sword at In-gong's waist. It wasn't a common sword he had pulled out from the inventory.

The space was opened, and the Giant King's Sword soared from his inventory as it responded to his Telekinesis. It rotated roughly and smashed into everyone in front of In-gong.

Kwakakakak!

The lead warrior of the blood warriors was destroyed with a terrible sound, and over 20 blood warriors were thrown to the ground or into the air.

It didn't end there. The Giant King's Sword moved ahead of In-gong again. Under the control of his Telekinesis, the Giant King's Sword was the most suitable weapon for wiping out the enemy soldiers on the battlefield.

The blood warriors shouted loudly again. They shot arrows at In-gong, and the power behind each one was enough to pierce through the target. In-gong didn't bother reading the trajectory of the arrows. He just looked at the front like he was ignoring them. In fact, he was actually ignoring the arrows.

‘Battlefield Protection!’

It was a Protagonist Correction skill which lowered the accuracy of projectiles on the battlefield greatly. Half the arrows flew to the wrong place, while the remaining half didn’t even reach In-gong. It was natural. There was a heavy wind. Green Wind had created a wind barrier which twisted the course of the arrows. The arrows flew in the wrong direction and poured down on the heads of the blood warriors like bombs.

‘Rise!’

Green Wind commanded. Then the ground started shaking violently. The place where Green Wind was staring grew into a tree at a tremendous rate. It became a natural barrier which prevented the blood warriors from rushing to In-gong.

In-gong looked simultaneously at the mini-map as well as what was in front of him. At that point, Abseltur’s confusion could be felt, and the movements of the blood warriors rushing toward the sura showed unrest.

“Go!”

In-gong waved his hand, and the Giant King’s Sword flew straight ahead. Abseltur was no longer simply looking. The chimeras of the carriage he was riding were released, and they rushed toward In-gong. It was for the purpose of buying time.

The Giant King’s Sword collided with the blood warriors, while the chimeras rushed toward In-gong by trampling on the blood warriors.

The chimeras had the horns and body of a goat, the wings of a griffon, the tail of a snake, and the head of a lion. They were a monster which could reach a dozen meters in length just by staying still, making them seem five times larger when they were charging.

In-gong jumped over the Giant King’s Sword. When he saw the flames coming from the chimeras’ mouths, he didn’t hesitate to invoke Black Specter. The sound of hundreds of wings flapping was heard as black smoke wound around the chimeras. The chimeras screamed at the black blades which sliced their bodies, and as In-gong passed through the chimeras, he released Black Specter. The large carriage where Abseltur sat with an angry expression was in front of In-gong.

As In-gong approached, Abseltur rose up into the air, and his flesh started swelling.

‘Master!’

Green Wind shouted. Then In-gong opened his mouth and fired Dragon Breath!

Kwaaaaaang!

The pillar of light extended out swiftly. Abseltur, who was floating in the air, became greatly panicked. He spun his body desperately to avoid In-gong’s Dragon Breath.

Dragon Breath passed by Abseltur’s giant body. No, it could be called a wide area attack. Two out of the six wings popping out from Abseltur’s back were caught by the Dragon Breath and vanished.

Abseltur crashed with a scream. He now resembled a cerberus with the heads of a wolf, dragon and eagle as well as six bat wings.

The ground shook the moment Abseltur crashed into the ground, and it seemed like the earth was screaming. In-gong breathed out and focused magic power on his right hand. He completed the ballista-sized Fire Arrow and added the strength of Dragon Words into it.

“Levantein!”

It soon became a fire sword, and the giant flames rushed forward fiercely. However, Abseltur took care of it easily. Although he was hurt, he roared toward the Fire Arrow. At that moment, a powerful wave of magic power ripped apart the Fire Arrow In-gong had created.

Kuhuhung!

The battlefield trembled at the fearsome roar. Abseltur got up from the ground. He was a giant whose size reached 20 meters in height, but his movements were agile.

Chupak!

A blue smoke exploded. In-gong jumped and used Blink simultaneously as he thrust

forward White Eagle on his left arm. Then something black emerged from Abseltur's right hand and hit In-gong.

'Master!'

In-gong couldn't afford to respond. After being hit by the strong blow, he used Blink just before hitting the ground. Instead of being slammed into the ground, In-gong moved to the side and used Dragon Breath again.

Abseltur looked at In-gong, and the wolf head smiled.

Chupak!

This time, Abseltur was the one to use Blink. He moved forward from where he had been standing and completely avoided Dragon Breath before transforming. His three heads combined into a giant wolf mouth which aimed at In-gong. The transition was so quick that In-gong had no way to avoid it.

Abseltur bit down at In-gong, but he couldn't tear In-gong apart with his teeth. His teeth were blocked by the strong wind barrier Green Wind had created.

'Master! Hurry!'

The force exerted from Abseltur's body was like poison. Green Wind was touching his aura directly, so she was feeling terrible pain. In-gong tried to use Blink, but it was impossible. Abseltur had surrounded In-gong with magic power and was blocking it. Abseltur was truly an ancient creature.

'Master!'

Green Wind was close to screaming. Abseltur focused, and the power he emitted became even more tremendous. Even Green Wind, who had been strengthened through Apostle Appointment, couldn't withstand it any longer.

It was the reason why a Saintess like Beatrice was needed to defeat Abseltur. Abseltur's unique power could be overwhelmed by the divine power of Beatrice, who could be called the incarnation of the earth goddess.

In-gong created a spark of divinity, but it was weak. The power of the flame was too

weak to drive back the surrounding darkness. He had to strengthen his divinity, and In-gong had one method left to do that.

“Green Wind!”

It was a command. Green Wind could no longer resist the power of darkness. She felt doubts and fear of losing In-gong. Abseltur would kill him. The force of darkness poured down suddenly on In-gong and swallowed him.

At that moment, In-gong triggered a skill which could be used because he had acquired divinity.

‘Spiritualism! Four Heavenly Kings!’

‘Dhrtarastra, the guardian of the east, the true king of the gandharva!’

At that moment, In-gong’s divinity swelled, immediately burning the power of darkness surrounding him. This time, Abseltur was the one who screamed. As though he had swallowed fire, he opened his mouth urgently and retreated.

It wasn’t just Abseltur.

Everyone on the battlefield felt the power of a mighty divinity. The blood warriors and sura looked in In-gong’s direction without knowing it. Beyond the boundary of the Sanctuary, the sword duke stopped wielding his sword against the army of the lich.

“Gandharva!”

The sword duke exclaimed. He remembered the sin of the gandharva many years ago.

They had intended to artificially create the strongest royal child who would leap over the 2nd Prince Zephyr. It was an absurd ambition to have for the next demon king.

The 5th Queen, who loved the demon king more than anyone else, had agreed to this stupid plan. It wasn’t because of a desire to become the mother of the next demon king. It was instead because she couldn’t bear a child and wanted to have a child with the demon king.

However, the plan had failed tremendously. Additionally, unlike the 5th Queen’s wish,

the child hadn't been born with the blood of the demon king. Unlike the rhetoric of the gandharvas who had persuaded the 5th Queen, the demon king's blood hadn't been used.

It was the strong divinity which the gandharva kept... It was the last essence left behind by their great ancestor that was implanted.

The child had been born without a soul, just like a breathing doll. That existence had become vitalized after a dozen years and showed an overwhelming talent when compared to the 2nd Prince.

Now, yet another power was blooming once again.

The sword duke recalled the face of the 5th Queen, Semita Ignus. He also remembered the appearance of the demon king who had lifted up the devastated Semita as she hugged her child, the sin of the gandharva. On that day, the demon king had taken the 5th Queen's child as his own, and the child had been given the position of 9th Prince.

That's how it was, but the sword duke didn't care. He simply rejoiced in the prince's pure strength. The sword duke swung his sword again and no longer looked back.

Green Wind was also affected. She stared at In-gong with a blank expression.

In-gong's hair grew instantly until it reached his ankles. His hair became pitch black, and his original red eyes were dyed gold.

'Beautiful.' She could only think of that. The heavenly aroma spreading from In-gong's body seemed to paralyze her.

'M-master. This is a foul! So handsome! Ah, no. Beautiful!'

In-gong could regain his spirit thanks to Green Wind's words, well-aware of the powerful divinity throughout his whole body.

This was a temporary power. Just like Beatrice's great skill where she became the incarnation of an earth goddess, In-gong could only hold it for a few minutes. Moreover, it was an excessive transformation.

However, it was enough.

‘Conquer!’

The white woman’s voice was heard. She seemed giddier than usual. In-gong formed a fist, and Green Wind blessed In-gong again. The divinity of the last flame was added, and a white spark rose from In-gong’s whole body.

Abseltur could not approach and growled angrily. In-gong smiled as he watched Abseltur. It was such a bewitching smile that Green Wind almost screamed again.

The distance between In-gong and Abseltur narrowed.

The god and creature collided once again.

Chapter 179

Battle #6

There were two things necessary to fight Abseltur. One was a might divinity and the other was preparation for poison.

Abseltur could poison the surrounding area just by breathing. Moreover, his poisons were different from common poisons. Abseltur's poisons were constantly changing in type.

Therefore, unless the person knew every decryption magic, it was inevitable for them to be poisoned. The even more horrible fact was that they could still be affected by another poison, even if they were already poisoned.

Once dozens of poisons overlapped, a person wouldn't be able to survive no matter how great they were. It was Abseltur's poison which had taken the life of the second fairy ruler, the one who had destroyed Abseltur's body. She had been poisoned by more than 100 poisons and had been unable to avoid a painful death.

Abseltur breathed out his poison. Not only did the serpent of the tail open its mouth, but the dragon, wolf and griffon heads also breathed out different types of poison. He had been hesitant to use the poisons because they would take the lives of the subordinates he'd brought, but there was no time to worry about that now.

Naturally, In-gong knew all about Abseltur's poisons. However, he jumped into the poisons without any hesitation.

[Thousand Poisons Resistance is activated.]

[Thousand Poisons Resistance is activated.]

[Thousand Poisons Resistance is activated.]

When it came to poison resistance alone, In-gong overwhelmed even Locke and Zephyr. He couldn't completely prevent damage from the poisons, but that was enough. Moreover, with Abseltur changing the poison every minute, it was a good

experience for In-gong.

[Thousand Poisons Resistance is activated.]

[Thousand Poisons Resistance is activated.]

Every time Abseltur used a new type of poison, a message would be triggered. It was a happy situation where In-gong would accumulate experience even if he just stood still.

[The level of Thousand Poisons Resistance has risen.]

[Thousand Poisons Resistance has been promoted to Ten Thousand Poisons Resistance.]

In-gong's resistance to poison exploded once again. He rushed through the mist of poisons and reached Abseltur, who belatedly realized the poisons had no use.

A white and black aura collided in the air. Abseltur moved to one side to avoid a direct strike from In-gong, before deciding to change his tactics. Masses of magic power, at least two meters in diameter, were launched in succession.

In-gong knew this attack well. Instead of trying to rush toward Abseltur, he threw White Eagle and widened the distance. Abseltur twisted in the air to avoid White Eagle. His agility was reminiscent of a cat or bird of prey. However, In-gong didn't miss that. The moment Abseltur turned his body, In-gong used his last Dragon Breath!

'It is no use!'

Abseltur used the Blink he had prepared in advance. His body soared up into the sky, and In-gong's Dragon Breath hit an empty space.

However, In-gong didn't stop using Dragon Breath. Rather, he poured more power into Dragon Breath. It wasn't due to desperation; In-gong had a clear target. From the beginning, his target had been something other than Abseltur!

"Absolute Area!"

Green Wind called out. Dragon Breath struck White Eagle in the air, reflected off, and

changed direction. It now aimed toward Abseltur in the air. It was impossible to avoid this attack. Moreover, the Dragon Breath was faster and stronger due to the effect of Absolute Area.

Abseltur shrieked as Dragon Breath hit him. He twisted desperately to escape the trail of Dragon Breath, but he was already damaged. All four remaining wings were destroyed, and a large hole drilled in his torso.

‘Noohm!’

Abseltur crashed to the ground and sprang up quickly. However, it was already too late. The moment that he started to fall, In-gong stopped Dragon Breath and used successive Blinks. In-gong ended up behind Abseltur.

Abseltur had three heads. When fighting common monsters, every head should be cut off, but Abseltur was different. In the first place, the three heads were a result of the transformation, so In-gong needed to aim for the body.

He concentrated divine power and aura on his right fist. Earth Quaker growled angrily but accepted the divine power.

Abseltur looked at In-gong and chose to avoid In-gong, instead of attacking. He abandoned his current appearance hurriedly and took the form of a huge wolf head. The wolf head was only three meters big, making it rather small compared to his previously huge body, but there was no way for him to miss In-gong in the air.

However, that was a mistake. Once Abseltur took the image of a wolf, In-gong triggered his last Blink. The dark blue smoke exploded, and Abseltur saw In-gong appear before him as though he had been aiming for this moment.

‘How?!’

Abseltur couldn’t move. Telekinesis had frozen Abseltur’s body in midair. It was a power Abseltur could destroy immediately if he exerted his strength, but he didn’t get the chance. This was the first time Abseltur had fought In-gong, but In-gong was different. Considering the number of simulations, Abseltur was an opponent In-gong had fought over a dozen times!

“Tr-ue Des-truct-ion!”

In-gong used Earth Quaker's super special move. His fist struck Abseltur's abdomen, and a brilliant destructive force emerged. It was a divine destruction—a power which could not be tolerated. Abseltur's body exploded.

Kiaaaack!

There was a horrible scream as a black spirit hit In-gong. It was Abseltur's true body.

In-gong didn't avoid the mental attack. He didn't have Beatrice's magic, but In-gong had his own divinity. Additionally, he wouldn't swap out Green Wind's blessing even if it meant two Beatrices.

In-gong's divinity collided with Abseltur's unique power and destroyed it. Dozens of sharp wounds appeared on In-gong's body, with blood gushing out like a fountain. However, In-gong didn't stop. He stretched out his hand and triggered Telekinesis. In-gong caught Abseltur's mental body as it was trying to escape!

'Lightning!'

In-gong struck Abseltur in midair, and the sacred flame from his divinity burnt Abseltur's spirit.

Abseltur was in terrible pain as he died. Instead of watching Abseltur's end, In-gong paid attention to the remaining parts of Abseltur's body. Abseltur's heart, the nucleus of his magic to be precise, was still safe.

Once purified by Saintess Beatrice, it was a magic power core which was almost as useful as the dragon heart. It would be nice if Amita could insert it into White Eagle.

[Your level has risen.]

A voice rang out.

After putting the magic nucleus in his inventory, In-gong sighed. At the same time, his god status was lifted, and naturally, the black hair was cut. His hair and eye colour returned to their original colours as well.

“Master! Are you ok... ay?”

Green Wind cried out as she flew toward In-gong. Then suddenly, she was sniffing his body because of the oddly sweet fragrance coming from his whole body, mainly his blood. In-gong laughed as he returned Earth Quaker to the inventory and extended an injured fingertip to Green Wind.

Green Wind hesitated for a bit before sucking In-gong’s finger like a possessed person, then her eyes shone. It was a taste which couldn’t be expressed in words. After becoming a divine humanoid, his gandharva characteristics were enhanced. Moreover, divine power had been concentrated for the final blow. So, In-gong’s blood could truly be called a god’s drink.

A slightly dangerous light appeared in Green Wind’s eyes, but In-gong ignored her. Although he had defeated Abseltur, there were still enemies remaining.

In-gong took a breath and opened the mini-map. Then he blinked in a manner similar to Green Wind. There were almost no red dots left on the mini-map. The blood warriors nearby had been killed by Abseltur’s poisons, while the ones far away had been wiped out by the sura. He couldn’t see anything on the other side of the Sanctuary either.

“Indeed, the gandharva king... the power of Dhrtarastra.”

A voice was heard from behind In-gong. It was shortly after the battle had ended, but he hadn’t even felt a presence approach. In-gong turned back to face the sword duke with a little bit of surprise and discomfort.

The sword duke’s clothes were a mess. Although they weren’t as badly damaged as In-gong’s clothes, there were parts which were torn or seemed burnt. The more surprising thing was that his hair and clothes were actually a bit messy. However, there was no disturbance in his breathing at all. In-gong couldn’t see even one drop of sweat on the sword duke’s forehead.

In-gong shouted reflexively,

“The lich?”

“Collapsed. All his alter egos meant that it took a while.”

Indeed, this was the sword duke. Come to think of it, the sword duke was the strongest person in the Demon World, before the demon king. Even if Lich Shutenberg was strong, it was natural he wouldn't be an opponent for the sword duke.

'Rather...'

The first words from the sword duke circled strangely in his head.

'The strength of the gandharva king, Dhrtarastra.'

How did the sword duke know that? Instead of surprise, there was a strange emotion in the sword duke's voice. It felt like this incident confirmed what the sword duke already knew, rather than surprising him with something new.

In any case, it was over. This time, he had suddenly brought In-gong to the Sanctuary, and the sword duke also seemed to know something he didn't.

"Rather, what is this smell? It seems to be coming from Prince."

The sword duke said, sniffing suddenly. The surprised In-gong turned to look at his right hand and moved it behind his back. He had reached out to let Green Wind taste it, but he couldn't do that for the sword duke. No, that would be rather frightening.

"Uh, um. A characteristic of the gandharva."

In-gong responded before using Dragon Words. He washed off the blood, minimizing some of the sweet fragrance. The sword duke looked at In-gong with a gentle expression, then he smiled.

"Prince truly is 5th Queen's child."

"Sword Duke?"

In-gong heard a newfound story in the sword duke's words, but the sword duke didn't say anything else. He just laughed and spoke with an excited face,

"Anyway, Prince, shouldn't you take a short break after the emergency? How can I send away a guest who came from a distant place? Moreover, I have some things to talk

about with Prince.”

The sword duke raised his hand to In-gong’s shoulder and turned him around. In-gong could see the silver tower and the sura under it.

“Welcome to the land of the sura. Please note that you are the first one among the children of the demon king to set foot in the Sanctuary.”

The sword duke winked and hit In-gong’s back.

Chapter 180

Sanctuary

There were 30 or so suras gathered in front of the silver tower. There were males and females, but the one thing they all had in common was that they were young.

‘Are they like civil militia?’

Even the weakest one looked equivalent to a junior general, making them too powerful to be part of the civil militia. The inhabitants themselves were similar to ‘villagers’. As In-gong approached with the sword duke, one of the sura came toward them at a quick pace. He was a young man with red skin.

“Sword Duke.”

“Indara.”

A slight smile appeared on the sword duke’s face. Indara was dressed in almost the same clothing as the sword duke, but he was wearing gold instead of the sword duke’s white. Moreover, his hair colour stood out because it was a dark blond.

“Prince, this is Indara who is in charge of the militia. He is one of the rising stars of the sura.”

“I am Indara, and I greet the 9th Prince.”

Indara bowed to In-gong. He gathered both hands together like a monk, in what seemed to be the sura’s unique greeting method.

“It is nice to meet you.”

In-gong received Indara’s greeting with a smile. He seemed like a young man around 20 of age, but he was actually 70 years old.

‘Is he the one who replaces Gallehed?’

Gallehed, the sura captain, was the captain who was usually killed early on during the lycanthrope subjugation in Knight Saga. Immediately after Gallehed's death, Indara had become the head of the sura at the Demon King's Palace.

'Speaking of Gallehed... Did he grow up outside the sura village?'

According to Knight Saga's setting, Gallehed hadn't been born in the Sanctuary or Demon King's Palace but had been found in lycanthrope territory. His foster parent had been the late lycanthrope king and 4th Queen Elaine's father, so the lycanthropes' trust in him was very strong.

'He's been friends with 4th Queen Elaine since childhood right?'

Knight Saga's setting filled In-gong's mind. While In-gong was thinking about this, the sword duke turned to Indara and said,

"Indara, please clean everything up. I will return to the village first with the prince."

"Leave it to me."

Indara said confidently before bowing to In-gong again. In-gong said goodbye to Indara and moved with the sword duke. The size of the tower was more than what he had thought. It was an oval, not a perfect circle, but it was clear that the height of the tower was over 100 meters.

"I never imagined this. I am actually guiding Prince into the Sanctuary."

The sword duke said suddenly as they arrived in front of the doors to the silver tower. He glanced back at In-gong before pushing his palms against the door. The huge doors opened to reveal the inside of the tower.

It was a moderately large village, and it looked like a rural scene with crop fields and children playing. However, the landscape of the village wasn't what caught In-gong's eye. There was a magic circle in the center of the village. It was a ward which caused a pillar of light.

This was another sanctuary within the sanctuary of the sura. According to the sword duke, this could be called the sanctuary of the whole Demon World.

The sword duke raised his hand to In-gong's shoulder, speaking softly as he moved forward.

"Welcome to the home of the sura, Prince."

In-gong passed through the doors. The air inside the ward felt different. If it was winter outside, the inside of the ward was autumn. To his surprise, there was a sky inside the ward.

The sura farming in the fields bowed to the sword duke. He received them and sent back informal greetings.

"Prince, the Sanctuary has been attacked several times over the past hundreds of years. They were targeted attacks on the sura and the Sanctuary."

The sword duke suddenly turned his gaze toward the ward in the center of the village.

"That guy, Shutenberg... This is already his third attack. He doesn't come directly, but every year he sends a few clones. However, that has limitations. According to our magicians, his body receives a lot of damage every time a clone is broken."

According to the sword duke's words, the attacks were quite relentless.

Why was Shutenberg aiming for the Sanctuary? Lich Shutenberg was so powerful that it wasn't an exaggeration to call him a warlord of the Demon World. It was hard to imagine why he would want to attack the Sanctuary.

In that sense, Abseltur was also a big deal. Did they have a temporary alliance because they were both aiming for the Sanctuary? Or were they moving under someone else's orders? The Death Knight and War Knight entered his thoughts reflexively, but Shutenberg and Abseltur didn't give off the auras of War or Death.

"Sword Duke, can you tell me about the Sanctuary?"

At In-gong's question, the sword duke took a deep breath and replied,

"It is a very important place for the entire Demon World. The demon king decided to hide the Sanctuary from the eyes of the world. The large wards make it hard to find

the land of the sura. It seems like Shutenberg somehow sniffed out its location... but I think it will be safe now for a few years. In the meantime, I hope to find Shutenberg's base."

It was safer to strike directly against the enemy, rather than wait for them to attack the Sanctuary.

'Indeed.'

In Knight Saga, the sword duke had the image of a wanderer. If the sword duke were locked to the Sanctuary, he wouldn't have met Amita, another wanderer of the Demon World. Therefore, the story seemed correct.

The sword duke frowned suddenly and spoke in a slightly annoyed voice,

"Prince, I'm sorry, but I can't tell you much more right now. I hope you understand."

"I understand."

So far, based on the stories and actions of the sword duke, the existence of the Sanctuary was a strict secret in the Demon King's Palace. Since it was the order of the demon king which had brought him here in the first place, it was natural for the sword duke to be careful with his words.

Thus, it was now time to wait.

"Thank you for understanding. By the way, Prince, are you okay? You faced a fairly strong enemy."

"He was strong. I was able to beat him due to having the right balance of skills."

They weren't words of humility. It would have been really dangerous if he hadn't intensified his divinity.

'Only the poisons weren't a big deal.'

When he fought Abseltur in Knight Saga, Saintess Beatrice had often been exhausted, like Felicia after 'faster than the wind' was mobilized. In addition to the various blessings, he had been able to use detoxification magic just like breathing.

“Hoh, indeed.”

The sword duke stared at In-gong before turning his gaze back to the front again. He didn't ask about any of it. In-gong once again felt a sense of incongruity. Although In-gong had clearly changed, the sword duke didn't express any doubts about those changes. It was obvious that there was something. Perhaps he knew the secret of Shutra, rather than In-gong.

As they reached the village walls, a few young sura greeted the sword duke and In-gong. The sword duke exchanged words with one of them briefly before speaking to In-gong.

“Prince, I think I need to look at the ward for a while. You should go and rest first.”

“I understand.”

“Thank you.”

He then called out to a young sura woman, “Sindra.”

Sindra was a woman with long red hair and skin which was white like snow. She was a beautiful woman who seemed to be in her mid 20s.

“I will serve Prince.”

Sindra bowed, like Indara had done, before leading In-gong to a large building nearby. It was a building he thought would be a town hall, but there was an alien feeling as everything inside was oriental.

Sindra guided In-gong to a room which looked simple but tidy, then she withdrew after leaving a message for him to call her if she was needed. When he checked the mini-map, she seemed to be waiting in a small room nearby.

In-gong wanted to call Sindra and ask her something, but he changed his mind. If the sword duke was silent, then it wasn't likely that Sindra would answer honestly. It seemed better to wait for the sword duke.

Some time passed by.

In-gong lay on a bed made of bamboo woven together and smiled.

“Master, can you give it to me one more time? I will be a well-behaved guardian in the future.”

Green Wind sat close to In-gong. She begged cutely for one finger, but In-gong pushed her away.

“No, Green Wind is already a well-behaved guardian.”

They were words that even Carack would admire. Green Wind stared blankly for a moment before crying out angrily,

“Master, then I will misbehave from now on!”

“Then no more. How can I reward a bad guardian?”

Green Wind nodded unknowingly before making a panicked expression.

“Hiing, Master is bad! Bad! Petty!”

“But am I not good to Green Wind?”

Green Wind’s face became grouchier at his words. Green Wind smacked her lips together a few times before hitting In-gong’s shoulder and screaming,

“Master is a fool!”

Then she disappeared into the wind. However, In-gong just smiled as she disappeared like a pouting child.

‘Ah, how fun.’

It was almost as fun as teasing Felicia.

‘I’ll give it to her later when we return to the Demon King’s Palace.’

In-gong couldn’t create tremendous tasting blood at any time. In order to make the

blood taste the same, he had to use Spiritualism.

‘If I am going to do it, then it should be when everyone is together.’

It was good to share it. He also wanted Felicia, Caitlin and Carack to try it.

‘Will everybody be worried?’

He had left so abruptly that it was obvious they would be worried. The more he thought about it, the more he wanted to take care of them.

‘Well, it is something like this.’

Anyhow, he would give them his blood.

‘Well, it can’t be much.’

He couldn’t give too much blood and other fluids. Shaking his head to get rid of the thoughts, In-gong looked at the clock on the mini-map. It had already been an hour since he had separated from the sword duke.

‘I should have a real nap.’

The moment that In-gong thought so...

“Prince, would you like something to drink?”

The sword duke showed up unexpectedly at his window. He was holding a small tray which contained warm wine and a few snacks. In-gong turned to look at the door for a short moment, then he got down from his bed and sat facing the sword duke. The sword duke handed the cup to In-gong first.

“Thank you for your help. Thanks to Prince, the damage was able to be minimized.”

Abseltur’s poisons would have dealt massive damage to the sura, even if they defeated him in midair. In-gong smiled humbly. Then the sword duke spoke again,

“Is there anything you want in return? I will do my best to get it for you.”

It was something In-gong had been waiting for. He had finished putting his thoughts together while waiting for the sword duke to return.

‘He might reject this.’

That was the first thought which came up. There was a question he really wanted to ask the sword duke. In-gong took a deep breath before asking,

“I would like to know about the sin of the gandharva.”

At In-gong’s request, the sword duke made a difficult expression and shook his head.

“Prince, I need the demon king’s permission for that. I can’t just tell the truth to Prince.”

Although it was a rejection, there were still meaningful words mixed in.

‘Perhaps? Is there something secret about the sin of the gandharva?’

Maybe a small hint was given.

‘I have to wait for Nayatra.’

Instead of digging further, In-gong said another answer he had prepared,

“Then Sword Duke, I would like to learn more about Sura Heart Law.”

“Hrmm... that is good. And I think Prince needs a little bit of organization.”

“Organization?”

“Yes. Various powers are mixed randomly in Prince’s body. It seems to be organized, but... it is very disorganized. I can at least help organize your aura.”

In-gong used aura, magic power, psychic power, and divine power. Moreover, as the number of aura hearts increased, his system became more complicated. It was a situation where he needed to organize the traffic.

“Thank you.”

The sword duke raised his cup at In-gong's words and said,

"I think it is better to talk about it tomorrow after returning to the Demon King's Palace. Now, drink some more."

They exchanged a few more glasses. Then the sword duke suddenly asked in a sly voice,

"That reminds me. Between 6th Princess and 8th Princess, who is better? Ah, maybe you think the 4th Princess is better?"

It was a sudden but also familiar question. In-gong recalled the face of 4th Queen Elaine, and the sword duke's eyes narrowed.

"Prince, it seems like you have received this question before."

Indeed, this was the sword duke. In-gong shrugged and replied,

"4th Queen asked me playfully."

"Hoh, 4th Queen."

The sword duke slowly stroked his beard. Somehow, there was a knowing expression in his gaze.

'What? Is there something else?'

Elaine's biggest weakness was Caitlin. Was this a sign that he knew about Caitlin's birth secret? In-gong thought inwardly as the sword duke drained his cup. The sword duke refilled In-gong's cup, as though saying that In-gong's concerns were unfounded.

The white woman lifted her head in the darkness. Her red and blue eyes were gazing far away.

Sanctuary...

It was a place which hadn't existed when the red dragon destroyed all civilization thousands of years ago. There was no connection to her. She couldn't relate to it, yet the white woman could feel it.

A voice was calling from beyond the ward in the center of the village.

It was a voice calling In-gong, not the white woman.

[TL Note] The author has provided a drawing of Felicia below:



Chapter 181

Confluence

10,000 years ago, the Red Dragon of Apocalypse had destroyed all civilizations on the earth. The beautiful and glorious civilization of the indigenous species were completely lost to the world.

It was strange.

Drakon Kechatulla, the great dragon warrior, had fought against the red dragon by collecting all the power of the elder dragons of that time and had been finally able to defeat it.

The red dragon had destroyed all civilizations but not the world.

There were remnants of the indigenous species all over the world. The giants and lizardmen, species created by the indigenous species to fight against the Four Riders and the Red Dragon of the Apocalypse, had lost their first appearance but their bloodline continued.

However, the bloodline of the indigenous species had died out completely; they had no descendants.

What had replaced them? What had happened?

There was almost no one left in the world who knew this truth.

The next morning, In-gong rushed out of the Sanctuary. It wasn't due to the sword duke but because In-gong felt some strange.

'Conquest.'

He was able to sense the mood of the white woman deep in his soul. She wanted to

leave the Sanctuary as soon as possible.

The reason wasn't clear. It was still difficult for In-gong to communicate with Conquest. Sometimes he could sense Conquest's feelings, but at present, she was more difficult than usual. She closed her eyes and seemed to be trembling with anxiety.

'Is it because of the Sanctuary?'

In-gong couldn't think of any other reason.

He left the Sanctuary with the sword duke and ran toward the cave with the transportation formation. They left the silver top and crossed the snowy field. There was something the sword duke hadn't told In-gong yet.

In-gong cut off his thoughts and looked ahead. As the distance from the Sanctuary increased, Conquest's mood improved.

Once they arrived at the cave, the boy and girl from yesterday welcomed the sword duke. They talked in the sura language, but this time, In-gong didn't feel any discomfort because he had already learnt it. The sword duke gave a few orders to the boy and girl before guiding In-gong to a room next to the transportation formation. It seemed to be a naturally created room, but the word 'training' flashed through his head.

"Prince, please sit comfortably on the magic circle in the center of the room. I will finish organizing your aura before returning to the castle."

"I understand."

Instead of explaining things one by one, he was going to move the aura directly.

'That is much better.'

In-gong was more accustomed to knowledge being pounded into his body, rather than learning one by one. He sat down, and the sword duke immediately sat behind him.

"Prince, take off your coat and circulate it naturally as you normally do. I will slowly intervene."

After taking off his coat, In-gong started to circulate his aura. Then a white aura started to rise around In-gong's body.

The sword duke held back a laugh. It had been only a few months since he first encountered In-gong at Thunderdoom Fortress, but the aura couldn't even be compared to that time. It had grown tremendously in quantity and quality.

The sword duke breathed in and raised both palms to In-gong's back. Not long after, he once again felt in awe.

It wasn't because In-gong's skin was very white and smooth. It was the circulation of aura occurring inside In-gong's body which amazed the sword duke. He already knew In-gong had several aura hearts. So, it wasn't surprising since the sword duke and demon king also had many hearts. However, he was more surprised than expected when he looked directly at the circulation.

In-gong had three aura hearts. He had a natural aura heart, the Moonlight Core, and the dragon heart, which was the most mysterious one. The sword duke hadn't realized the dragon heart was in In-gong's body, but the surprises didn't end there.

The dragon heart wasn't only involved in aura circulation. Magic power poured out of the dragon heart and interlocked with the other aura hearts. The magic power simulated an aura heart, making it four aura hearts instead of three.

As the number of aura hearts grew, the benefits would increase in two ways. One advantage was that the volume of aura would increase. The other was that the aura would become stronger and faster by connecting two aura hearts. The sword duke adjusted the way the aura hearts were connected so that In-gong's circulation would improve. The result of the four aura hearts interlocking perfectly caused the sword duke's heart to pound.

That wasn't all. The sword duke was once again impressed with In-gong's aura. No, this time he was surprised.

There weren't just aura and magic power inside In-gong's power. There was also psychic power and divine power. The sword duke already knew that there were many forces inside In-gong's body. The movements of the psychic power and divine power deviated from the sword duke's expectations.

The two forces should be independent of the circulation of aura. However, it wasn't like that. Both powers responded a little bit to the circulation of aura. It was only a small movement, and there was no effect on the circulation of aura. However, the sword duke read the possibilities.

In-gong had already created a pseudo-heart made out of magic power. If so, there was a possibility for pseudo-hearts to be made out of psychic power and divine power. It might truly be possible, and if so, the aura hearts would be made up of four different powers.

The sword duke swallowed his saliva. The pounding of his heart wasn't enough. He couldn't hide his excitement. Laughter emerged; it was uncontrollable laughter.

'Gandharva.'

No, it wasn't just them. It was evident that something else was involved.

The sword duke could feel the power of an elder dragon from the dragon heart. It made sense since the 9th Prince had some equipment of the elder dragons.

The divinity of the gandharva, the dragon heart of an elder dragon, and the Moonlight Extract of the lycanthropes... However, it didn't end there. There was still the most important thing remaining.

'Extreme Nothingness.'

The essence of nothingness which contained the demon king's achievements. The seed was lodged in In-gong's spirit.

The sword duke was finally able to understand the demon king. He understood what the demon king had said about the torrent of destiny.

Aura, magic power, psychic power, and divine power... If all four powers created an aura heart, there would be no limits.

The sword duke broke off from his imagination. He was overly excited, but that would ruin In-gong's aura circulation instead of helping it.

'There is a sense of commitment.'

Was it because the demon king acknowledged the child of the 5th Queen as his? The sword duke laughed and denied it. It wasn't that. The demon king he knew wasn't such a man.

The sword duke concentrated his mind, and he poured his energy into arranging In-gong's aura.

"Did you wake up?"

In-gong opened his eyes. He was still in the dim training room. The voice belonged to the sword duke, but the first thing he saw was Green Wind's face. She pouted as she allowed In-gong to use her knees as a pillow.

"Green Wind."

"Master, bah."

Green Wind answered before disappearing into the wind. Thanks to that, In-gong fell to the ground with a low moan.

The sword duke laughed at the sight before asking,

"Prince, did you do something to make your guardian angry?"

"It was just a little joke."

In-gong touched the back of his head and raised his upper body. He saw the sword duke sitting with his back against a wall. The sword duke laughed again.

"I think I understand. Those with Prince have to suffer a lot."

In-gong nodded as he thought about Felicia's and Anastasia's complaints.

"Anyway, Prince, a day has already passed. Check it once."

The sword duke's meaning was clear. In-gong circulated his aura immediately. Not

long after, admiration flashed through his eyes. The flow of aura had nearly doubled. The amount of aura had also increased.

“It is really amazing, Sword Duke.”

“Prince is even more amazing. It is the first time I’ve ever seen a body like that.”

It was at that moment that the clear voice of a woman resonated in In-gong’s head.

[Divine Sura Authority – Wind Style has been upgraded to Transformed Wind Style.]

[Divine Sura Authority – Lightning has been upgraded to Faithful Lightning.]

[Divine Sura Authority – Great Mountain has been upgraded to Transformed Great Mountain.]

“Ohh.”

From the upgrades, it was obvious that the techniques had improved. Maybe the sword duke had injected the techniques while adjusting his aura.

“Prince, I know you like it, but I think we need to hurry. This took longer than I expected.”

The sword duke hadn’t expected to spend a whole day readjusting In-gong’s aura. So, he was already later than planned by a day.

“I understand.”

In-gong had little reason to delay returning to the Demon King’s Palace. If he delayed anymore, Felicia and Caitlin’s worry would only increase.

The boy and girl gave a few rice balls to the sword duke and In-gong before preparing the transportation formation. In-gong devoured the rice balls as a light shone from the transportation formation.

No more questions were needed. In-gong and the sword duke moved onto the transportation formation.

He opened his eyes to see the Black Castle instead of the cave. The sword duke stepped down from the transportation formation first and said,

“Prince, I will go to the demon king. Don’t worry, I will definitely tell him about your merits.”

“I’m not worried.”

In-gong smiled gently. It seemed like the sword duke wanted to look at the demon king’s state. The sword duke knocked lightly against In-gong’s shoulder.

“Go rest. Give my regards to the other princes and princesses.”

“Thank you, Sword Duke.”

The sword duke didn’t say anything else and disappeared like the wind. Instead of hanging around the Black Castle, In-gong used the newly learnt Transformed Wind Style to head back to the mansion. His speed was much faster than before.

As he ran, he checked the time on the mini-map and saw that it was 8:32 p.m.

‘It is late.’

Caitlin and Felicia would be resting at their mansions, so it was too late to call on them now. It wasn’t midnight yet, but it had been awhile since their meal was over.

‘Let’s be satisfied with seeing Carack and Karma today.’

He would tell the news to the children of the demon king tomorrow morning. As soon as he arrived at the mansion, he opened his mini-map out of habit, and his eyes widened instantly. In-gong headed toward the terrace instead of the door, just like the sword duke. He opened the large window of the reception room and laughed.

“What, everybody’s gathered?”

It wasn’t just Carack and Karma. Felicia and Caitlin were also sitting on the sofas. Felicia and Caitlin, who were sitting down and reading books, jumped out of their

seats and ran to In-gong.

“Shutra!”

“Are you okay? You aren’t hurt anywhere?”

Caitlin hugged In-gong, while Felicia, who missed out, shrugged and examined him with her eyes. In-gong hugged Caitlin tightly before looking at Felicia.

“Were the two of you waiting here?”

In-gong had spent roughly three days at the Sanctuary. The thought of them waiting here for three days caused his heart to throb.

“It is because you disappeared suddenly.”

“Unni was very worried.”

Caitlin smiled at Felicia’s words. As expected, Felicia covered her face with her fan, while a bitter voice spoke out from behind her,

“Shutra, don’t forget that we are also here.”

“Can’t you see us?”

It was Silvan and Chris. The two of them stared over at In-gong with sulky expressions.

“Yes, Hyungs are also here.”

Chris frowned at the soulless answer, while Silvan was already used to it and just laughed.

“I’ll tell you just once, but we were also very worried.”

“I wasn’t.”

Chris grunted angrily, and In-gong decided to go over. Then another voice was heard from the side.

“Prince, we are here too.”

Carack and Karma... In-gong really felt at home when he saw Carack’s smile which exposed Carack’s charming fangs. It was at that moment that Caitlin, who was still holding In-gong, suddenly pushed her nose against his chest and sniffed.

“Caitlin?”

Felicia was aghast, but Caitlin didn’t stop. She sniffed some more before raising her head with bright eyes.

“Shutra smells very good.”

Then Caitlin started sniffing again. Felicia shrugged and said,

“Caitlin, Shutra is a gandharva and inherently smells good... Did the smell get better?”

Felicia’s eyes flashed. She didn’t sniff like Caitlin but collected the smell using her fan. As the two sisters made a fuss, Silvan and Chris joined, and both of them made a startled expression.

“Prince, did you roll around in a flower bed before coming here?”

In-gong shrugged at Carack’s question before turning to Felicia.

“Noona, can you prepare a ward for that? I don’t want the smell or any sound to escape from this room.”

Felicia narrowed her eyes, but she nodded easily as she was already familiar with this request. She prepared the ward, while Caitlin and Chris sniffed him. They really liked the scent.

“It is done.”

A translucent membrane wrapped around the room, while In-gong, his siblings, Carack, Karma, and Delia sat on the couch.

“I want to give a gift to everyone.”

“A gift?”

Felicia made a puzzled sound. They thought he wanted to talk about the place where the sword duke had taken him. While everyone was confused, Carack suddenly clapped his hands and said with an excited voice,

“Prince, perhaps?”

“I know what you are thinking, and it isn’t wrong. Just wait a minute.”

As expected, Carack noticed quickly. In-gong used a hand gesture to calm Carack down and took a deep breath.

“Spiritualism, Four Heavenly Kings.”

In-gong didn’t care about using Spiritualism at this time. As the divinity of Dhrtarastra strengthened, his hair became black and long like when he fought against Abseltur. The room was filled with a heavenly scent. Everyone on the sofas couldn’t help exclaiming. They looked at In-gong with charmed expressions, proving that Green Wind’s words weren’t incorrect. Felicia’s face reddened. Chris swallowed his saliva unintentionally, while Silvan’s eyes widened.

“Amazing...”

Caitlin muttered.

It was a somewhat burdensome reaction. However, In-gong just showed an attractive smile before taking out some glasses from his inventory and placing them on the table.

‘It should be with some alcohol.’

In-gong followed up with some alcohol from the Dragon Temple. It wasn’t possible for them to suck his fingers like Green Wind, and he was afraid for his blood supply.

‘This is almost like a drug.’

In-gong concentrated divine power on his right hand, then he triggered the skill he learnt when he became a divine humanoid. In-gong wounded his fingertip with an aura blade and dropped a few drops of blood into the alcohol. As he became wounded,

a new fragrance spread which caused everybody to drool. Thanks to the Lycanthrope Tears, there was no need for magic healing. As soon as his finger injury healed, In-gong turned off Spiritualism and looked at everyone.

“This is special. I guarantee the taste.”

Carack was the only one who had tasted In-gong’s blood, so he was greatly excited. However, rather than handing out the cups, In-gong only raised one. He had already decided who would taste first.

“Green Wind.”

In-gong called out to Green Wind. She appeared with a still sulky expression and said,

“Master is bad.”

It was as expected. In-gong said slyly,

“Am I still good?”

There was a long wait. Green Wind couldn’t help smiling and approaching In-gong.

“Still good.”

Her whisper was pleasant. In-gong patted Green Wind’s head gently and handed her the first cup.

“So, in summary, you went somewhere that you can’t tell us... No, you became stronger?”

“Yes.”

Chapter 182

Confluence #2

“So, in summary, you went somewhere that you can’t tell us... No, you became stronger?”

“Yes.”

Felicia sighed at In-gong’s blunt answer, then she asked again in a pleasant voice,

“How long are you going to keep becoming stronger?”

“I have to become stronger to protect Noona.”

In-gong said shamelessly. Felicia blushed and turned her head away.

“Hey, what are you saying?”

Felicia covered her red face with her fan and told him not to tease her. Still, she looked fairly happy.

“Felicia, Oppa as well. Oppa will also become stronger to protect Felicia.”

Silvan jumped in and held Felicia’s hand tightly. He gazed at her with truly passionate eyes.

“Yes.”

This time, it was Felicia who replied bluntly. It was a soulless answer which didn’t conceal any embarrassment. However, Silvan just formed tight fists and became determined again, causing Chris to click his tongue. Then Chris spoke in a sharp voice,

“Shutra, do you need to keep the place a secret from us?”

There were hidden meanings in his words. Additionally, there were some signs of

disappointment. All the people gathered here were strong supporters of In-gong. Moreover, he didn't want to keep it a secret from Felicia, Caitlin, or anyone else.

However, it couldn't be helped.

"This is the sword duke's request. Sorry, Hyung."

In fact, the sword duke had stated it many times. On the road to the Sanctuary and inside it, the sword duke had stated that the other Sanctuary inside the sanctuary of the sura was the most important secret.

"Hmm, then it can't be helped."

Chris stepped back after hearing the name of the sword duke. Although he didn't have an official position in the Demon King's Palace, the only one who surpassed his authority was the demon king. After finishing this conversation to a certain extent, Caitlin's hand immediately shot into the air. She looked like a young student asking a teacher something.

"Shutra, how did you get stronger? Can you tell us this?"

Her shining eyes were full of curiosity. Felicia, Silvan, and Chris also looked at In-gong with interest. In-gong nodded and said,

"The sword duke organized my aura. And... my power as a gandharva was strengthened through ancestral regression."

"Sword Duke?"

"Ancestral regression?"

Two voices spoke at the same time. They belonged to Silvan and Chris.

'Indeed, Silvan and Chris.'

However, like Chris, Felicia and Caitlin seemed more curious about the ancestral regression. In-gong decided to explain it as concisely as possible.

"The members of the Eight Legions, including the gandharva, were divine beings. I

became closer to this existence through ancestral regression.”

Although he didn’t talk about the method of how he received the ancestral regression, the reason why he had become stronger was clarified. Felicia recalled the mighty divine power that In-gong had emanated and nodded. Chris made a joking expression and said with a smile,

“It sounds ridiculous, but... I believe it if it is Shutra.”

This hadn’t happened just once or twice. Chris had already decided to give up after In-gong received the Moonlight Core. Felicia wasn’t much different. From the beginning, she was much more involved with In-gong than Chris. She was surprised so many times that her heart couldn’t stand it.

‘Should we change his nickname from Disturbance Shutra to Strange Fate Shutra?’

Felicia thought to herself. Caitlin raised her hand again and asked,

“Then Shutra, you taste delicious. Are all gandharva delicious?”

Caitlin asked the straightforward question. Once again, all the children of the demon king seemed interested. Carack and Karma also had curiosity in their expressions. In-gong was perplexed since their gazes seemed more intense than compared to when he had been talking about the ancestral regression. However, he pushed that thought away and replied,

“No, nothing like that... I am an unusual case. If I don’t activate Spiritualism and melt aura, magic power, and divine power, then I won’t taste like that.”

It wasn’t really an exaggeration. Even prior to receiving divinity, his body fluids were much more delicious than normal gandharva. It was absolutely impossible for ordinary gandharva to imitate the taste in his divine state.

‘Of course, I haven’t met other gandharva.’

However, it was probably right. Additionally, somehow, it seemed like he would deal a huge blow to the survival of the gandharva if he answered wrongly here.

“Too bad.”

Chris, who was the wildest beast in the room, clicked his tongue with disappointment. It seemed like he was thinking back to the taste. Caitlin also seemed disappointed as her shoulders slumped, but it was only for a moment. She shook her head and said with a bright voice,

“I still like Shutra’s scent. Is anything other than your blood delicious?”

“Eung.”

In-gong coughed and blocked Caitlin’s next words. In order to prevent a dangerous topic, he quickly talked about something else.

“Rather, I have one more thing to offer Caitlin noona and Chris hyung.”

“Offer?”

Chris’s eyes narrowed as he frowned slightly. In-gong exchanged glances with Felicia before responding. Although they didn’t use message magic, the two people were able to understand the meaning in their eyes. As he read permission in Felicia’s gaze, In-gong let out a relieved sigh. He faced Chris and Caitlin and said,

“It is about a knight appointment.”

“Surprisingly, Felicia noonim and Silvan are already your knights?”

Chris spoke in a disbelieving voice after In-gong explained. It was because of Felicia. Felicia was designated to become the ruler of the dark elves. It was unthinkable that she would become subordinate to someone else under a magic contract. As she read the censure in Chris’ eyes, Felicia spoke in a small voice,

“It was to save Silvan. And... I don’t regret it. It was the best choice.”

Although it might seem like an excuse, Chris no longer pushed Felicia. It wasn’t up to Chris to worry about Felicia’s decision.

Chris just nodded before turning back to In-gong.

“Shutra, I will help you so that you can become the demon king. I am also interested

in becoming stronger as your knight. But I can't. I will be the king of the lycanthropes. I can't be subjugated by someone else."

"I understand, Hyung."

Felicia wouldn't have become In-gong's knight if it wasn't for Silvan's life being in danger. So, it was greedy to expect Chris to become his knight.

"But the story is different when it comes to Caitlin."

Chris said, while In-gong tried to maintain his composure. In fact, In-gong had been aiming for Caitlin in the first place. Chris was the future king of the lycanthropes, but Caitlin's position was different.

"Caitlin, you can do what you want."

Chris declared before burying himself deeply in the sofa. Caitlin exchanged glances with Felicia before turning to him. She took a deep breath and declared with a firm expression,

"I will become Shutra's knight."

"Thank you, Noona."

The level of the King's Knights had risen at the 12th base, so there were two new places. One of those places would now be filled by Caitlin. Caitlin got off the sofa and knelt down on the floor. She raised a hand to her chest and bowed to In-gong. A child of the demon king was becoming the knight of another child. It would be a strange matter if it were declared to the outside world.

In-gong stood up as well and pulled a sword from his inventory. It was an ancient sword he had brought back from the Dragon Temple.

"Caitlin Moonlight, I appoint you as my knight."

He said as he placed the sword on Caitlin's shoulder. The power of Conquest was triggered. The power of Conquest went through the sword and enveloped Caitlin's entire body.

It was almost like all the others, but something was different. In-gong and Caitlin could feel it. The two people were already strongly linked through the Moonlight Core and Starlight Core. Then the power of Conquest was added. So, the situation turned out different from the others.

‘Conquer.’

The white woman whispered. Along with her voice, the power of Conquest at In-gong’s fingertips became more powerful. Caitlin didn’t resist; she accepted In-gong’s power of Conquest.

[Caitlin Moonlight has been conquered.]

[The power of the Conquest Knight has increased.]

[The King’s Knights: the number of apostle upgrades has increased to two.]

In-gong felt the power of Conquest strengthening. The power of the King’s Knights became stronger, causing all his knights—except Chris—to become stronger. Caitlin raised her head which was wrapped in a white light. The white Conquest Coat of Arms appeared on her forehead.

“How does it feel? Is it strange?”

In-gong returned the sword and raised Caitlin up. Caitlin thought about the question before smiling happily.

“Great.”

By the time Caitlin’s appointment as a knight was over, it was really late. All the children of the demon king returned to their mansions, and Karma went to her room, leaving only In-gong and Carack behind.

“Well, there is something awkward, but I have to report it. There are many things that occurred without Prince... Why are you looking like that?”

“No, I’m just glad that Carack is my aide.”

Carack shivered and shrugged at In-gong's words.

"Don't act like I'm one of the princesses. Nasty."

"Then please tell me the report."

"Understood."

In-gong and Carack laughed before discussing what had happened within the Demon King's Palace during the last three days.

"So, it's confirmed that three days after the court gathering, we will be dispatched to the north?"

"Yes. As 4th Princess and 6th Prince guessed previously, all the princes and princesses are to be dispatched to the north. I'm sure there will be an official statement from the Merits Department."

A lot of preparation was needed before leaving for the north. They had to wait for the new court gathering, and the period of preparation could be too slow, so everyone received notifications in advance.

"The north."

In-gong could imagine a big invasion from beyond the limit line. The movements in the north were unusual. In-gong was reminded of the Death Knight and War Knight. If a large invasion were to actually occur, then the two of them were likely to be involved.

"And Prince, there is good news. General Vandal has returned to the Demon King's Palace."

"General Vandal?"

"He seems to have finished cleaning up Evian. There was a separate letter stating that he will leave the army and move with Prince after returning to the Demon King's Palace."

It was good timing. If being sent to the north was truly to prepare for a great invasion, the nature of the mission would be different from all the previous ones. In-gong had

to organize his own army.

“It would be great if you make an army around Vandal.”

In-gong agreed. It was possible to create an independent unit if he used the rewards collected so far generously.

“There is an organizational chart that I made in advance. Prince should review it once. I’ll see you tomorrow morning.”

Carack said quickly. In-gong nodded with a pleased expression and said suddenly,

“Carack.”

“What is it?”

“I’m really lucky to have met you.”

Looking at In-gong’s sincere voice and eyes, Carack shook his head and said with a sigh,

“Prince, you really have become someone who tries to lead people astray. Is this a change due to the ancestral regression?”

“Well... maybe I have an incubus ancestor instead of a gandharva?”

In-gong said with a smile, and Carack chuckled.

“I don’t want to! Why do I have to look at it once again? I have no reason to put that heart in White Eagle! Are you trying to exploit my labour?! This scammer!”

“I will give you another drink.”

“Leave it to this Amita!”

Chapter 183

Confluence #3

The next afternoon, In-gong visited Amita's workshop. There was the matter of modifying the fourth elder dragon equipment, El Ragra, but he also had some things he wanted to entrust to Amita.

However, Amita started rampaging as soon as In-gong brought up a new request.

"I don't want to! Why do I have to look at it again? I have no reason to put that heart in White Eagle! Are you trying to exploit my labour! This scammer!"

In-gong had two new requests. One was to repair the Giant King's Sword, while the other was to insert Abseltur's heart into White Eagle.

Amita looked quite angry as they tapped their tail on the ground, but In-gong still had a relaxed expression on his face. He knew this was going to happen and had given Amita the 'Heavenly Wine' in advance. Moreover, Amita was also peeking at him during their tantrum like they had been expecting it. In-gong smiled villainously and said,

"I will give you another drink."

"Leave it to this Amita!"

Amita jumped up and was ready to begin work immediately. It was the most ambitious In-gong had ever seen them.

'What a fearsome power.'

Looking at the present situation, it seemed like he would be able to keep using Amita, even if he didn't use the excuse of the last flame.

'It is like when I knew they liked sweets.'

In-gong nodded and turned toward Daphne next to him. She was dedicated to taking care of Amita.

“I will also prepare a share for Daphne. You have gone through a lot of trouble.”

“Not at all. I am always happy to help Prince.”

Daphne said with red cheeks. The tips of her toes wriggled as though she too wanted to jump around with joy, like Amita. In-gong laughed and took out the Giant King’s Sword and White Eagle from his inventory.

“Then I will leave it to you.”

“Just leave it to me!”

Amita smiled as their tail waved. It was the first time In-gong had ever seen Amita like this.

‘Is it because they have a strong appetite or is the Heavenly Wine truly so great?’

It felt more like the latter.

‘So, I shouldn’t abuse it.’

He would give a small bottle to the 3rd Queen and 4th Queen, but that was it. It was better to hide the recipe as well.

‘It will be a problem for me, but it will also be a big deal if the gandharva are damaged.’

Ordinary gandharvas had a good smell. Although their body fluids weren’t as delicious as In-gong’s, he didn’t know if it would add some flavour. In-gong nodded as he remembered some wildlife which had become endangered due to overfishing. He could be overreacting, but it was always better to be careful.

Carack, Felicia, and Delia were waiting at the entrance of the workshop.

“Is it done?”

“Yes, I have never seen Amita look so passionate.”

In-gong smiled as he explained. Felicia shook her head like it was ridiculous.

“Hah. Oh, my god. Shutra, you let them drink it this morning on purpose?”

Felicia knew that Amita’s morning breakfast had included the Heavenly Wine. In-gong shrugged and replied,

“Well, a little bit?”

“Shutra, you are terrible.”

Felicia shook her head in disbelief and sighed. Although In-gong’s Heavenly Wine wasn’t bad, there was a lot of room for abuse.

In-gong asked Felicia,

“Noona, do you want more?”

He had made quite a lot yesterday, so he still had some to spare. Carack and Delia’s eyes shone at In-gong’s suggestion, but Felicia’s reaction was different.

“Uhh... it is okay. I want to drink it, but I can bear it.”

It was Delia who was the most shocked at Felicia’s words, but no one noticed it except for Carack. In-gong made a questioning sound and asked,

“Why?”

If it were Felicia, In-gong wouldn’t add any conditions like he had done with Amita.

Felicia opened her mouth several times before finally speaking.

“It isn’t that easy to make the Heavenly Wine right? You have to use Spiritualism and then melt divine power and divinity. You also have to shed blood. No matter how delicious it is, I don’t want to force Shutra to do anything unreasonable.”

Felicia was a good magician and knew about the meaning of blood. Blood was the essence of life and the soul. It wasn’t just a simple body fluid.

After saying this, Felicia exhaled. Her heart wanted to taste the Heavenly Wine everyday, but she had to endure it. It was at this moment that In-gong suddenly took hold of Felicia's hand.

"Shutra?"

Felicia asked with surprise as In-gong stared at her. Then he dragged Felicia into an embrace.

"I only have Noona. Felicia noona is the best."

Who else would give up the Heavenly Wine for him? Even the dignified Green Wind had asked him for more.

"Hrmm."

Felicia reacted like she had always done, but she didn't push In-gong away. Instead, she just smiled.

'I-I also don't want Master to do anything unreasonable.'

Green Wind whispered in In-gong's ears. However, instead of saying thank you, In-gong replied bluntly.

'Aren't those just words?'

'Hiing.'

Green Wind's past actions contradicted her words. After teasing Green Wind a few more times through their mental connection, In-gong released Felicia from his arms. She looked disappointed, while Carack clicked his tongue and said,

"Prince, it is impressive, but it is now time to move on."

"Of course. Let's go to the Merits Department."

There were many things to prepare before the next court gathering. Felicia tidied up her clothing and said,

“Are we supposed to meet Caitlin and Chris at the Merits Department?”

“Uh, I have decided to meet the 4th Queen after the work at the Merits Department is finished.”

4th Queen Elaine Moonlight was currently staying at the Demon King’s Palace. However, it wasn’t just her. All the other queens had also decided not to leave the Demon King’s Palace until the next court gathering, due to the unusual cancellation of the previous one.

“Hmmm.”

Felicia thought for a moment before asking,

“Shutra, if we are going to the north, do you want to go through the territory of the dark elves? It would be a good idea because we will be able to get some support from the dark elves.

She brought up the idea she had suggested before it had been decided that he would be sent to Curtis. The home of the dark elves was in the north, so it was possible to go through there like Felicia said.

“That isn’t bad. I want to go to the palace of the dark elves.”

“Okay, then it is decided. I will tell Omamama.”

Felicia nodded at In-gong’s answer. She wanted to make sure that it really happened.

“Princess is the reason why Prince looks so good.”

Carack said with a laugh, and Felicia quickly opened her fan. Delia just smiled like she had already given up.

“Then Noona, what do you think about the organizational chart that Carack made?”

In-gong asked Felicia as they walked towards the entrance of the mansion. She had been talking about it with Carack while waiting for In-gong.

“Not bad. I think it is pretty good. It feels like a high-mobility unit?”

“It is to take advantage of Prince’s maneuverability skills. The army needs to be very fast to follow Prince.”

Carack added.

Felicia agreed with Carack’s concept. The first condition was that all the members would be mounted. She couldn’t help laughing as she recalled ‘faster than the wind’. It felt like she would be exhausted again when they headed to the Northern Limit Line.

Felicia turned toward In-gong and spoke once again,

“A high-mobility unit can be created using the golems that can only be found at the Demon King’s Palace. The number of them will be small, but is that really so bad? I think it would be good to have a small number of elites. But there is one problem.”

“The cost?”

“That’s right, if you want to implement a unit like this, you will need of merits and riches.”

Carack had planned an independent unit consisting of only 100 people. Considering the size of the armies at the Demon King’s Palace, the number itself was small but each one of them would need to be an elite. They would also need extraordinary equipment normal soldiers wouldn’t be able to afford.

In fact, when In-gong first saw the estimated cost then, he had thought it was impossible. However, when he looked carefully, he saw that it was viable.

“I’m not lacking in merits or wealth if I count all the treasures I’ve collected. I’ve explored a few ruins with Noona. There is also Amita to create the equipment.”

It was also possible to use the equipment taken from Thunderdoom Fortress. In-gong had gained many merits with every mission. Moreover, the gap between achievements was short, so he hadn’t spent the merits on many things.

‘I couldn’t do this in Knight Saga.’

He had gained merits in several months which would have taken him a few years in Knight Saga. Felicia nodded with satisfaction at In-gong's words. She had accompanied In-gong on almost all his missions, so she was as familiar with his merits as Carack.

"Hmm, okay. I like it. Will the commander of the independent unit by Vandal?"

"Yes, does Noona agree?"

"Yes."

Being the leader of an independent, high-mobility unit was the best position for Vandal.

"Vandal said that he will arrive at the Demon King's Palace tomorrow morning."

Carack interrupted with important information. Then In-gong boarded the carriage with Felicia and suddenly recalled Sektum...

One of his three most loved subordinates in Knight Saga. In-gong currently had Nayatra and Vandal. However, he didn't know the whereabouts of Sektum, the last one.

'I have to find Sektum.'

In-gong wanted to obtain him.

After worrying about it for a little bit, In-gong then arranged his thoughts. Now that he had a lot of power to mobilize, it was time to concentrate on the search for Sektum.

The carriage In-gong and Felicia were in headed to the Merits Department.

Then the next morning, Vandal arrived at the Demon King's Palace.

Zephyr's gaze moved to a place far away. He was riding a nightmare while Sektum and Quanta were standing behind him. (TL: The nightmare here uses a different Korean word, so it is different from the succubi and incubi)

Unlike Sektum who was in a relatively free state, Quanta was heavily restrained. She

still looked like a gandharva, and all her limbs were restrained. She couldn't see due to being blindfolded and she was gagged. The only freedom she was allowed was her hearing.

Sektum followed Zephyr's gaze. There was a group approaching.

They wore cloaks which signified they were knights from the Erebos Church. Everyone was wearing thick armour and helmets which covered their entire faces, so they couldn't be distinguished as male or female. However, there was one person among them whose age and gender were both recognizable.

A young woman was riding on a black unicorn. Sektum had never met her before, but he could figure her out her identity with one glance.

Dark Saintess Altesia...

She was dressed in gold and had long, beautiful black hair reminiscent of the night. Sektum couldn't see the colour of her eyes because they were covered with a black cloth. However, according to rumours, they were golden like the moon in the night sky.

Her pale white skin emphasized her beauty, and there was a small smile on her face as she gazed at Zephyr. Altesia bowed slightly like they were close acquaintances, while Zephyr frowned and drove the nightmare toward her. Altesia spoke first,

"Isn't this too stiff? I am still your fiancée."

Sektum's eyes widened at the lively voice. The Saintess of Erebos was engaged to the 2nd Prince? However, instead of kissing his fiancée's hand, Zephyr frowned.

"I have no memory of an engagement with you."

"The great Erebos has decided it. You are the protagonist that the oracle mentioned."

Altesia spoke again, and Zephyr sighed. After turning to look at the 20 knights behind Altesia, he asked her in a loud voice,

"Are you going to join me?"

"I will join you."

Altesia replied happily. She had ridden to the far north to be with Zephyr. Erebos' oracle had pointed toward him.

Zephyr allowed Altesia to join his group, then he headed to the north with her.

The Death Knight looked toward the south.

The War Knight was approaching.

Death felt War's presence. Famine's power was also growing, despite still being weak.

It wasn't just the Four Riders of the Apocalypse who were gathering.

From the far south, the dragon warrior raised by Guardian Queian was heading to the north. One of the singularities, 2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros, was also approaching the northern area called the Aegis Gate. And the last one, the Conquest Knight, chosen by the loved and hated Conquest, was also heading to the north.

The Death Knight was patient. So, he waited a little bit longer. He had already been waiting 1,000 years for this.

The northernmost area of the Demon World.

The protagonists were gathering.

Chapter 184

Dispatch

The day of the court gathering was bright.

The fact that all four of the existing queens were participating attracted the attention of many, but the cancellation of the first one was an unusual event which made it even more interesting.

“What does Unni know? Is Abamama okay?”

Felicia asked as she sat on a chair in the waiting room. Anastasia, who was more graceful than anyone else there, turned gently and faced Felicia.

Anastasia was dressed in a light blue dress and had her usual calm vibe. Her hair, reminiscent of the sky, was raised and fixed with a white hairpin, exposing a long white neck which would cause any man to gulp.

“I don’t know anything.”

It was a very simple answer, but it was special due to her elegant gestures. However, no one in the waiting room blinked an eye at Anastasia’s elegant charm. Chris snorted and spoke in a growling voice,

“Rather, Anastasia noonim, why are you using the same waiting room as us?”

Caitlin’s and Felicia’s expressions changed subtly at his hostile attitude. Anastasia shrugged and stared straight at Chris with her purple eyes.

“Chris, is it strange to want to use the waiting room of my dear siblings?”

She spoke gently, like it was strange that she would need any justification to be there. Anastasia’s appearance, voice, and gestures had the power to control the mood.

‘As expected from the head of a faction.’

In armed forces, Baikal and Zephyr outnumbered Anastasia. However, they weren't her opponents in the political field. Anastasia had the largest number of concubine children on her side. Chris didn't have any words to refute Anastasia because she had brought about a strange atmosphere.

Anastasia smiled gently at Chris before shifting her gaze. This time, it fell on In-gong and Carack who were sitting side by side on a sofa.

"By the way, Shutra, you smell very good. No, the scent seems to have become deeper?"

As a succubus, she was very sensitive to smell. She seemed to have noticed the pheromones hidden in In-gong's scent. Instead of explaining, In-gong just smiled, while Caitlin spoke up,

"Anastasia unni, Shutra doesn't just smell good."

"Really? Then what else?"

Anastasia replied warmly, instinctively aware that Caitlin wanted to become closer to her. She placed her hand on Caitlin's back, and that seemed to break down the wall in Caitlin's heart. Caitlin laughed and said,

"Shutra is de-."

"De?"

Anastasia smiled as Caitlin looked desperately at Felicia. Fortunately, Caitlin had realized her mistake as soon as she spoke and forced herself to change the words.

"It is better when he smells like delicious food."

"Huh?"

Anastasia replied with a confused expression. Felicia sighed with relief and jumped up from seat, forcing Anastasia's gaze to turn toward her. Just then, a voice came through as though someone was helping Felicia. It was news that it was time to enter the court gathering.

“Wah, it is time to enter. Everyone hurry.”

Felicia spoke awkwardly, but all the children of the demon king, except Anastasia, responded quickly. They got up and headed toward the door, forcing Anastasia to set aside her curiosity for the moment.

As usual, the court gathering was carried out in order of age. As Anastasia entered the court gathering, In-gong let out a sigh. He had already experienced it several times, but he still couldn't help the pounding of his heart every time he entered.

“9th Prince, Shutra Ignus.”

He entered the court gathering as he heard Isabella's voice. In-gong stepped forward slowly with Carack. There were more people than usual because the queens were participating. In-gong naturally moved the focus of his aura to strengthen his eyesight, observing the demon king on the podium as he walked forward.

‘Was it not too bad?’

The demon king's appearance looked almost the same as the other court gatherings. He was watching his children with an expressionless face. It seemed like his illness hadn't reached a serious level yet.

‘It is fortunate.’

In-gong was sincerely relieved as he bowed to the demon king and queens. Then he moved to his position on Caitlin's right side.

Isabella started announcing In-gong's merits. Since there were so many merits, there were many things to announce. Therefore, In-gong focused on observing the queens.

Due to fairness, the queens were sitting side by side on a lower podium, instead of to the left and right of the demon king. Since they were sitting in order from 1st Queen to 4th Queen, In-gong didn't get the 1st Queen and 2nd Queen confused.

Just like in Knight Saga, 1st Queen Aishar Ragnaros gave off a very calm impression. Regardless of whether it was because 1st Prince Baikal Ragnaros and 2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnoros weren't around or because she had no interest in the court gatherings in the first place, the 1st Queen was just sitting quietly with a downward

gaze.

Her hair was blood red like Baikal's and Zephyr's, and the horns above her pointed ears were dark yellow. The pearl dress she wore was just as modest as Anastasia's, but the 1st Queen was reminiscent of a slender flower on top of a cliff.

2nd Queen Titania Nekrion was completely different from the 1st Queen. If 1st Queen Aishar was the calm autumn, then 2nd Queen Titania was the passionate summer.

Titania looked similar to Anastasia, but the impression she gave off was quite different. It was just like Caitlin and her mother. Unlike Anastasia who gave off a graceful and noble impression, Titania wore a violet dress and seemed to be the personification of sensuality.

Titania moved her long blonde hair as she gazed down at the demon king's children. There was a strange power in her purple eyes which could enchant the mind.

The Tears of a Dark Elf, which boasted absolute defense against mental attacks, was unable to stop the Succubus Queen Titania's bewitchment. Titania had the fearsome power to beguile a person just by looking at them sternly. However, due to the Succubus Tears Anastasia had given him, In-gong could turn his eyes away easily.

In-gong glanced toward 3rd Queen Sylvia Doomblade and almost laughed. Unlike the other queens who were watching the children of the demon king, Sylvia kept on glancing back at the demon king. She seemed to be concerned for him.

'Cute.'

In-gong arranged his expression and looked toward 4th Queen Elaine Moonlight. She glanced his way and greeted him by slightly moving her hand on the armrest. She didn't care about the gazes of others. Rather, she was making the behaviour obvious.

The eyes of the 2nd Queen turned to the 4th Queen. 4th Queen Elaine just laughed as though she was happy to receive the 2nd Queen's attention. Their eyes clashed over the 3rd Queen, who was busy watching the demon king.

"That concludes the report of 9th Prince's merits."

At that moment, Isabella's announcement of the merits was over. After that, it was the

same as usual.

“It is as we had expected. The children of the demon king will gather in the north.”

Chris said with a ferocious smile as they returned to the waiting room. His two beast-like eyes seemed to be seeing Baikal and Zephyr who were already in the north, instead of everyone else in the waiting room. Felicia was usually the one to reply to Chris, but this time she remained silent. She sat on the couch and gave a long sigh of relief.

“I’m glad that Abamama seems well.”

She had watched the demon king throughout the entire court gathering. In-gong couldn’t help smiling, and Caitlin blinked at the sight.

“Shutra, what is it?”

“No, it is just really similar.”

While Anastasia and Caitlin were quite different from their mothers, Felicia was really similar to 3rd Queen Sylvia.

Chris spoke again,

“Anyway, Shutra, when are you going to start? This time, we don’t need to rush because the time period is quite long.”

They only had to arrive at the north within a month. As far as missions went, it was the one with the most generous preparation time so far. Felicia recovered her spirit at Chris’ words and spoke in a loud voice,

“Shutra is going to the Sky Forest with me. So, we will be leaving a little earlier than usual.”

Chris’ eyes widened at her words.

“The home of the dark elves?”

The Sky Forest was the home of the dark elves and the land where the first fairy king had found the fairy a long time ago.

“Yes, it is a previous promise. I’ve already told Omamama.”

“Felicia, don’t forget that this Oppa is going with you.”

Silvan declared boldly after Felicia spoke, but no one paid attention to him. As poor Silvan was left to sulk alone, Chris opened his mouth to speak again.

“Hmm, I see. So, I’ll go with you.”

“What?”

This time it was Felicia’s eyes that widened. However, rather than facing Felicia, Chris patted the head of Caitlin, who was sitting next to him.

“Caitlin, do you want to go to Felicia noonim’s home?”

“Yes, I want to see it.”

Caitlin smile brightly at Felicia. Felicia flinched at the pure eyes, and Chris continued the offensive.

“Felicia noonim, surely you won’t be so cruel as to refuse to let Caitlin come along, will you?”

She hesitated as Chris used Caitlin as a shield, but it couldn’t be helped. Felicia nodded at Chris.

“Of course, you can come.”

In the first place, they were part of the same faction. Anastasia had left instead of coming back to the waiting room, so Felicia and Chris weren’t afraid to express their feelings. After watching the conversation between the two, In-gong asked Chris,

“Is it okay?”

It was a short question, but Chris understood his meaning. He patted Caitlin on the head again and replied,

“Of course. It is Omamama’s command, and... I’ve been separated from all of you for too long. Sometimes, we should stick together.”

“The 4th Queen’s command?”

“Instead of that, how is the unit that Shutra is forming? I heard that General Vandal will be the leader.”

Chris changed the topic. In-gong’s eyes narrowed, but he followed Chris’ topic.

“It will take some time to receive the troops from the Merits Department. General Vandal has been busy with all the procedures... The earliest it will take is probably three days?”

In-gong had barely been able to see Vandal for 10 minutes. A senior general wanted to leave the Demon King’s Army, so the process was bound to be complicated.

“Hmm, I see. Then what will you do today?”

The court gathering was over, but it was still early afternoon. In-gong leaned back in his chair and said with a pleasant face,

“I have to negotiate.”

In relationships, the one who fell in love first had the disadvantage, while it was the opposite for business.

Amita stepped toward In-gong and gave a long explanation,

“Recorder Torres’ El Ragra is still being converted. It is small, so the work is a bit tricky. But it will be completed sooner or later, so don’t worry.”

“Shouldn’t it be easier if it is smaller?”

Carack interjected. Amita frowned and knocked against the ground with their tail.

“That is just what you think, Orc. However, this little ring contains 10 times the magic patterns that went into your armour. Doesn’t that sound really hard?”

Amita was working on El Ragra but that didn’t change the fact that it was a ring.

“Um, then has there been no progress?”

Amita flinched at In-gong’s nonchalant tone.

“No, that is impossible! This Amita rushed to improve White Eagle!”

Amita moved swiftly and placed White Eagle in front of In-gong. The originally smooth White Eagle now had an emerald gem embedded in the middle.

“I put the heart that you obtained into White Eagle. Now, it can produce its own magic power as well as adjust the size and hardness in the field. Thanks to that additional magic power, it is possible to use a new means of attack!”

Amita jumped up again and turned White Eagle around. There was a long barrel installed at the bottom of the shield.

“This muzzle can shoot magic bullets. It is possible with both White Eagle and Black Eagle. Additionally, there is a further separation option added to Black Eagle. I call it Alpha Black Eagle and Beta Black Eagle.”

It was the completion of the ‘trinity’ which Amita had first envisioned when reconstructing White Eagle. White Eagle could now separate into three and had a ranged function, so In-gong couldn’t help laughing.

“Green Wind, can you steer it?”

“I will try. I can do it!”

The semi-solid Green Wind appeared and made a fist. Instead of paying attention to Green Wind, Amita just looked at In-gong.

“That isn’t all! White Eagle can give you additional magic power!”

“Ooohhh.”

Amita sighed with relief at In-gong’s admiring sound. Then she suddenly hesitated and said,

“That... some time is also needed to improve the Giant King’s Sword. It will take a while to work on El Ragra, so I can’t finish both in 10 days.”

It was common for everyone to be weak when asking for a deadline extension. Instead of complaining, In-gong smiled warmly at Amita and said,

“You’ve worked hard. Thank you.”

“Hum, hum.”

Amita stroked a beard they didn’t have and watched In-gong. Once again, it was a transparent act.

“Master, the fat raccoon has become the transparent raccoon.”

Green Wind whispered, and In-gong barely suppressed his laughter. He coughed a few times before saying to Amita,

“Amita, I’ve already heard about this from Daphne. Once you’ve completed all of it, I will give you the bottle.”

Amita’s tail waved happily, but In-gong didn’t let that happiness last long.

“By the way Amita. Will you go with us to the north?”

In-gong was scheduled to leave the Demon King’s Palace in a week, at the latest. There were a few more things Amita needed to give him, so it was better to take Amita with him. Amita fidgeted before saying,

“Hum, hum. That... how about a separate bottle for the travel expenses?”

“One cup.”

In-gong said.

Amita shook their head, and their tail struck the floor as they shouted,

“Three cups!”

“Half a cup.”

In-gong’s expression was cold. Amita started pleading,

“Why are you decreasing it?! It is normal to increase it!”

“Then one sip.”

It was reduced even more. Amita flopped on the ground like someone who had lost their soul and shouted in defeat.

“One cup! One cup! I will have one cup!”

“Good. Then one cup is decided.”

Indeed, In-gong held the upper hand. He then tried to comfort Amita,

“I’m sorry. I want to give you a lot, but this is a really precious thing. I don’t have much stock.”

The children of the demon king, standing behind him, stared in disbelief at his words, but In-gong wasn’t fazed. Amita didn’t know the recipe of the Heavenly Wine, so they just nodded.

“Sob, sob. Yes, I admit it. It has that type of taste.”

“Thank you for understanding.”

‘Master, you are like a raccoon trainer.’

Green Wind whispered in his ears again. In-gong pretended not to hear her and turned toward Felicia and Caitlin.

“Ah, I have something for both of you.”

“Huh?”

Instead of explaining directly, In-gong signalled to Amita. Amita used Telekinesis to hand a blue box to In-gong. Then In-gong opened the lid of the box and said,

“This is the full set of ornaments that I gave to Amita. Amita adjusted them so that Noona can use them.”

“Aren’t you making me work too much?”

Just like Silvan’s cries, Amita’s plea didn’t reach anyone in the room. In-gong took out the ornaments in the box and handed them to Felicia and Caitlin.

“Now, these earrings are for Felicia noona. The necklace is for Caitlin noona.”

The earrings given to Felicia were defensive objects, which created a defense ward that enveloped the owner’s entire body. On the other hand, Caitlin’s necklace was more geared to attack as it increased the wearer’s overall physical ability as well as the aura recovery speed.

‘Hmm. I have a way to handle Amita, so I can commission a full set from them.’

While In-gong was busy thinking about how to exploit Amita... Chris asked with a dour face,

“Shutra, do you have anything for me?”

“Uh, no.”

Chris’ face darkened even more, while Silvan stroked Amita’s sword, which Felicia had given him, with a happy expression.

“You are really like the sword duke.”

Amita said suddenly, as In-gong looked at Felicia and Caitlin with a gentle expression.

Then three days later...

In-gong's independent unit, led by Vandal, was completed.

Chapter 185

Dispatch #2

In-gong moved through the Demon King's Palace with Carack to inspect the newly formed independent unit.

There was a law which dictated a group of only 30 people could be stationed at the Demon King's Palace. Even the princes, princesses, and queens' soldiers were no exception to this law. Therefore, it was common for the demon king's children to have their independent units stationed outside. Anyway, the independent units were more needed outside the Demon King's Palace.

'It is only when there is no treason.'

The most basic thing about the Day of Massacre was to have troops stationed near the Demon King's Palace. So, he made some justification for the troops to be stationed there or secretly infiltrated his troops into the palace.

In-gong had no intention of rebellion, but due to this rule, he compromised by keeping his troops on the outskirts of the town inside the Demon King's Palace. Since the size of the independent unit was relatively small, In-gong was given permission just this once. He would need to move his troops somewhere else after a certain period of time.

'I can divide them between Felicia and Caitlin's homes.'

The best thing was to have them stationed in the gandharva territory. but that was impossible for now.

'I hope that Nayatra finds good information.'

Her information gathering information was the best in Knight Saga, but it was a situation where Nayatra had already left the Demon King's Palace. She had already been investigating for a month, so perhaps she had unravelled all the secrets.

'Shall I give her some Heavenly Wine?'

It was a truly fraudulent item. The production cost was quite cheap, but the effect was really great.

‘Speaking of that, what if I added the love potion made by the Succubus Tears to my blood? Will it become more effective?’

The Heavenly Wine, which In-gong created by melting together divine power and magic power, didn’t simply have a good taste. There were many addictive effects thanks to the power of divinity. If this was combined with the love potion of the Succubus Tears, then a synergy effect was likely to be created.

‘A love potion.’

In Knight Saga, its main purpose was to cause betrayal in the other side. If he could use it, then the targets would be Zephyr’s subordinates.

‘Zephyr has competent subordinates...’

He didn’t want to use the Succubus Tears straight away, but there was nothing to lose by thinking about it. After examining the male subordinates and then the female ones, Nayatra was the first one to come to mind. However, Nayatra was already In-gong’s subordinate.

In-gong smiled with pleasure, while Carack, who was watching from next to him, asked bluntly,

“Prince, what are you thinking about?”

“I was thinking meek and lucid thoughts.”

Carack immediately snorted at In-gong’s words. His sharp eyes didn’t miss anything.

“Don’t lie. Prince looks similar to when you use the Lucid Dream Pillow.”

“Hmm hmm.”

In-gong coughed as he recalled his most recent use of the Lucid Dream Pillow. Carack chuckled.

“Anyway, Prince, I’m glad that you are having good thoughts instead of dark ones. It is bad for your mental health if you are always thinking bad thoughts.”

Instead of responding, In-gong just toyed with Maybach’s reins. Not long after, they were able to pass through the gates of the Demon King’s Palace.

‘Master, there they are.’

Green Wind whispered in his ears. She was talking about a camp where a group of soldiers were stationed. There were exactly 100 of them. It was In-gong’s independent unit, so there was no need to open the mini-map and count them.

“Prince.”

“General Vandal.”

Vandal realized that In-gong had arrived and came to greet him. In-gong jumped down from Maybach and they shook fingers as usual. As Vandal looked down at In-gong’s hand which was grabbing his finger, he said,

“You have become stronger. It is incomparable to the first time that I saw Prince. I am doubting what my eyes are seeing.”

9th Prince, who hadn’t been better than Villager A, had become stronger than a senior general in less than a year.

“I had a growth spurt.”

It was a ridiculous excuse, but Vandal didn’t dig any further. This was the first encounter where Vandal sensed that In-gong was stronger than him. The speed of his growth was beyond imagination, but Vandal was happy to see it.

In-gong stood next to Vandal. There were a few familiar faces among the 100 independent unit members, who were mainly ogres.

“A few of my guards joined me when I left the military. Thanks to that, the procedure became somewhat complicated, but the 4th Queen resolved it well.”

In-gong nodded silently at Vandal's explanation. He once again saw the advantages of having a benefactor. The independent unit consisted of 20 ogres, 60 heavy cavalry, and 20 golems. The heavy cavalry started with orcs and had various species mixed in.

After examining the troops, Vandal invited In-gong back to his barracks to talk a bit more about the composition of the troops. However, In-gong and Vandal didn't have to rummage through paperwork. Instead, Carack and a familiar lizardman beside Vandal came forward. He was a soldier from the 7th base in Evian.

While Carack and the lizardman reviewed the documents, In-gong had a chat with General Vandal. It was mainly about what had happened in Evian after In-gong's departure. Vandal, who had been telling his story for a while, turned toward Carack's documents and changed the topic.

"Prince, I heard that you will soon be going to the Sky Forest."

"That's right, I will be leaving in three days. General Vandal will train the troops here and then move to the north."

"Are we joining you at the limit line?"

"That's right. Please look after the troops."

There was no reason to take the independent unit to Sky Forest. It was a newly completed unit, so it needed time to practice. Therefore, it was more efficient to have them join at the limit line.

"Hrm, I understand. Then Prince, can you name the unit before you leave?"

"Uh... I will think about it until we meet up again. Ah, I also want to ask you to do something for me."

In-gong asked, instead of giving a command. Vandal nodded with a serious expression.

"Whatever you say, I will be sure to pull it off."

"It isn't anything big. Do you remember Nayatra? If she returns after I leave, please take her with you to the north."

Vandal searched through his memories after hearing In-gong's words. They had been together in Evian, but the two people had rarely met.

"I remember. She is the pink-haired succubus. I understand. I'll do that."

Vandal replied, then looked at Carack. The review of the documents was almost over. In-gong also looked at Carack, then he stood up and reached out to Vandal.

"I'm glad to welcome you once again. Goodbye Vandal."

"Thank you, Prince."

They shook fingers once again.

Time flashed by.

A week after the court gathering, In-gong stood in the garden of the mansion and faced everyone who was leaving. They were the children of the demon king who belonged to Shutra's faction and their aides.

"Spread the sails! Pull the anchor! Black Flame Dragon, ho! Toward the Sky Forest!"

Silvan smiled and shouted. Sepira blushed naturally like she was now used to being embarrassed. In-gong understood Silvan. His dear sister and several siblings were returning to his home. However, there was one thing that In-gong had to tell him.

"Hyung, we are going using the transportation formation."

The home of the dark elves was directly connected to the Demon King's Palace via the transportation formation. There was no need to travel for a few days on the flying ship when they could get there in an instant.

Silvan was visibly panicked at In-gong's words. Then he turned hurriedly toward Felicia, who laughed brightly.

"Bye, Silvan. I will see you there."

“Bye, Oppa. I’ll be waiting at Sky Forest.”

Silvan’s eyes became moist as Caitlin said goodbye as well.

Silvan was the captain of the Black Flame Dragon. So, unless it was an emergency like last time, it was unimaginable for him to use the transportation formation instead of the Black Flame Dragon. In the end, Silvan’s shoulders slumped with a crestfallen expression on his face. Felicia sighed at his pitiful appearance and said,

“Come on, Silvan. It’s a joke, a joke.”

“We have already decided to ride the Black Flame Dragon. There is plenty of time anyway.”

Silvan’s face brightened again as In-gong confirmed it. Silvan grinned and dragged Felicia into an embrace.

“Felicia! Oppa believed in you!”

“Ah, come on!”

As Felicia pushed against Silvan’s chest, Chris approached with a sour expression like he didn’t like the scene occurring before him.

“Shutra, will the 3rd Queen be there as well?”

Currently, the queens did not stay for a long time at the Demon King’s Palace. Except for 1st Queen Aishar Ragnaros, the other three queens were the leaders of the their species.

“That’s right. I decided to go to the Black Castle in a short while to meet her.”

“The Black Castle?”

“It is to say goodbye to the demon king.”

3rd Queen Sylvia Doomblade had a deep love for the demon king. Chris nodded, seemingly convinced.

“I see. Okay, I am coming with you. I believe that Omamama is probably there as well.”

“The 4th Queen?”

“She doesn’t want 3rd Queen’s health to decline. They will be working together anyway.”

Chris knew 4th Queen Elaine Moonlight much better than In-gong did. So, In-gong nodded and turned back to Felicia. She was still in Silvan’s embrace.

30 minutes later, In-gong gulped inadvertently as he stood in one of the rooms of the Black Castle. However, it wasn’t because 4th Queen Elaine was with 3rd Queen Sylvia as Chris said.

“It’s great to see the demon king.”

At the same time as Silvan’s greeting, all the children of the demon king bowed. It was really unexpected. They had never imagined meeting the demon king outside of court gatherings. The demon king was nearby with the 3rd Queen and the 4th Queen. He got up from his seat and stepped within reaching distance.

In-gong had already met the demon king before, but this atmosphere was different from that time. His heart started pounding.

“Raise your heads.”

All the children of the demon king looked up at his words. Unlike during the court gatherings, the demon king was currently making a very soft expression. At first glance, he appeared emotionless, but there was a slight smile on his face.

Chris and Silvan couldn’t hide their confusion, while Felicia and Caitlin had no idea about what to do.

In-gong looked at the 3rd Queen and 4th Queen beside him. The 3rd Queen was sticking close to the demon king with a happy expression, just like when Silvan hugged Felicia, while the 4th Queen was smirking like she was enjoying this.

The demon king opened his mouth to speak,

“I heard that you will be going to Sky Forest before heading to the north.”

All of the demon king’s children, except In-gong, flinched. It was the first time they had heard the demon king’s voice from such a close distance.

“Felicia, Silvan. Have a good trip.”

Silvan breathed deeply, and Felicia bit her lip at the demon king’s words, feeling like she would cry at any moment.

“Chris and Caitlin as well. It is good to see my children getting along with each other.”

Unlike the excited dark elf siblings, Chris and Caitlin looked at the demon king with relatively calm expressions. Then the demon king finally looked at In-gong. In-gong was reminded of his previous meeting with the demon king. At that time, the demon king had looked and sounded similar to this.

It had been the demon king who delivered the Seed of Extreme Nothingness to In-gong. Why had he wanted In-gong to go to the Sanctuary? In-gong still didn’t have a clear reason as he hadn’t seen the sword duke after that day.

“Shutra, I will be expecting a lot from you in the north.”

In-gong bowed to the demon king. The stabbing sensation in his chest was difficult to explain. It was at that moment that...

“Oh, Abamama. We will be back. Stay healthy.”

Felicia came forward and bowed. Her voice was trembling.

“Yes.”

The demon king replied briefly and reached out to stroke Felicia’s head. This time, Chris and Caitlin gasped with surprise.

“Go well, my children.”

The demon king ended the short meeting, and the spellbound party exited the Black Castle.

“Hehe, hehehe.”

“Huhu, huhuhu.”

The first voice was Felicia, and the second was from Sylvia. The two people stood on the deck of the Black Flame Dragon and laughed wildly.

“A family of fools.”

4th Queen Elaine said while clicking her tongue. She had known that the 3rd Queen and 6th Princess wanted to become closer to the demon king, but she hadn’t thought it would be so severe.

‘The demon king is so insensitive.’

They had reacted like this to just a few words of greeting. Of course, Elaine didn’t let it disturb her. Elaine shrugged and concentrated on In-gong, who also stopped looking at the 3rd Queen and Felicia. He turned his gaze toward Elaine instead.

Elaine moved closer to In-gong and said,

“Shutra, once you go to the north, please visit Gallehed. He will be your strength in the north.”

“I understand, Your Majesty.”

Three of the captains were currently stationed in the north. Two of them already had factions they supported strongly. Richard was the captain of the draconians, and Yecaderina was the captain of the succubi. It was clear that the two of them wouldn’t support him.

Gallehed was a sura captain who advocated neutrality but not anymore. It was clear that he would support In-gong as a candidate for the throne.

Elaine didn’t explain why Gallehed would support him, and In-gong didn’t bother to ask why. The external justification was that Gallehed was 4th Queen Elaine’s

childhood friend. Moreover, In-gong now had the support of the sword duke. If the sura Gallehed supported In-gong, it would look like it was because of the sword duke.

Elaine told him a few more things before turning to look at Chris and Caitlin.

“And Shutra, please be more vigilant with Chris and Caitlin. Look after them well.”

“Chris hyung?”

In-gong asked with surprise, and Elaine smiled mischievously.

“Omo, were you only thinking about Caitlin? She is your Noona.”

Her face resembled Caitlin’s so much that he had nothing to say. Elaine laughed before getting back to the topic.

“Shutra, you know this already, but Sylvia is in kind. Her children, Silvan and Felicia, are also good. But even so, it is the territory of another species. Addition, Chris has some hostility toward the dark elves. Please control him so that he doesn’t go too far. I can’t say this to Felicia and Silvan, so you are the only one I can ask.”

Elaine said she was worried about the dark elves, but In-gong thought it was Silvan. His relationship with Felicia was quite good, but Chris was still distant towards Silvan. No, it felt like he held no sentimental feelings toward Silvan. Perhaps In-gong would find out the reason during this journey as Chris and Silvan would be together at the home of the dark elves.

“I understand.”

“Yes, then go safely.”

Elaine hugged In-gong like he was her own child, and In-gong didn’t react like before.

“Shutra, I won’t be washing my head for a while.”

Felicia said with a rapt look from the deck of the Black Flame Dragon. If the demon king had hugged her, she might not even take a bath anymore. Instead of answering, In-gong looked at Carack, who replied like the faithful aide he was.

“Then, Princess, you will smell.”

“That’s right, Unni. It is a little...”

Caitlin added, and Felicia flinched. Still, she was delighted by the fact that the demon king had stroked her head.

‘Indeed, she’s the one who was envious that my name was called at the first court gathering.’

A few years ago, the demon king had kept a distance from the queens and his children. The reason behind that was probably to cover up his illness.

The demon king Mitra, the man who had told In-gong to become strong enough to be the demon king...

After Amita and Daphne arrived, the crew of the Black Flame Dragon raised the anchor. They brought up the stairs and started to open the sails. In response, Silvan raised his sword and shouted,

“Spread the sails! Black Flame Dragon, ho! Let’s depart!”

The Black Flame Dragon spread open its black sails. Magic wind blew into the sails, causing a truly spectacular sight.

The Black Flame Dragon rode the wind. Its destination was the Sky Forest, the home of the dark elves.

Chapter 186

Ghosts

The Sky Forest, the home of the dark elves, was the land that the first fairy king had set up in the distant past.

Looking down at it from the deck of the Black Flame Dragon, In-gong let out sounds of admiration, and Chris and Caitlin weren't much different.

The home of the dark elves was reminiscent of a huge forest covered in fog. The fog was at a fairly high level, with the ends of the tall trees barely visible, while the high rise buildings looked like skyscrapers popping up through clouds due to everything underneath being covered by fog.

"Isn't this good? It looks like a forest in the sky, which is why it is called the Sky Forest."

"Yes, yes. Amazing!"

Caitlin responded to Felicia's description with a wide smile. It really was a fantastic sight. In-gong had admired the Sky Forest when he visited it several times in Knight Saga. The sky of the Sky Forest was truly dream-like in reality.

"But how can it play the role of the capital?"

Chris asked in a twisted tone. Admiration couldn't be seen on his face, but that was just Chris' nature.

Felicia seemed to have already anticipated this question as she replied quickly,

"The fog isn't present all day. So, the three of you are rather lucky. Such a sight isn't something that the residents here often see. There are only a few days a year when it looks like this."

"Hoh."

Chris didn't sound angry because he didn't have any bad feelings toward it in the first place. As Felicia said, it was a sight that couldn't normally be seen. The fog spread wide in the distance, so it was like watching clouds being lit up by the sun at sunset.

The chilly wind was pleasantly cool. Felicia arranged her hair which was blowing in the wind and leaned back against the ledge. She looked down at the forest and said with a shrug,

"Well, Chris' words are true to a certain extent. It is inconvenient to live here sometimes due to such a widespread fog. Quite frankly, there aren't many dark elves living in the Sky Forest itself. The dark elves live in other forests or cities around here. This is closer to being a spiritual capital."

"Aren't you being quite honest?"

Chris asked aggressively with a surprised expression. The old Felicia might have been angry about his words, but things were different now. She knew that an aggressive smile was an ordinary smile to Chris.

"Insisting stubbornly is something that only fools do. Additionally, you are the other person."

There was some shame in the last words. Chris frowned like he was confused while Caitlin just laughed.

"Unni is so good!"

"This child..."

Felicia didn't resist hugging Caitlin. It was a different reaction from when Silvan hugged her, but it was a heartwarming sight. In-gong watched the two people with a relaxed expression as Chris asked again,

"Hmm, but I am also curious. Why did the fairy king establish his kingdom in a place like this? Was it to hide it in the fog?"

The first fairy king had established his kingdom during a terrible time when the many species were at war. When deciding on the capital, it had been natural to choose based on defending against external attacks, rather than the convenience of traffic.

The massive scale of the fog was capable of hiding the residences. However, Felicia said that the fog didn't cover the Sky Forest 24 hours a day. Moreover, the dark elves resided elsewhere. Even if the Sky Forest didn't exist, there would be many places to hide.

"This isn't an ordinary fog."

"Shutra?"

It was In-gong, not Felicia, who replied, so Chris glanced at him in surprise. Felicia, who was hugging Caitlin, was also surprised. However, In-gong faced the two people with a relaxed expression, and Felicia nodded. As always, the answer was 'because it is Shutra'.

"Shutra is correct. You will discover the special feature of the Sky Forest fog once we descend."

Felicia shrugged, while Caitlin turned her head away from Felicia's chest and toward the ground. The Black Flame Dragon glided to the ground smoothly.

In the middle of the Sky Forest, the palace of the dark elves rose high into the sky. There were a wide variety of buildings built on what looked like plates, to the left and right of the central building.

The Black Flame Dragon landed on the lowest placed plate, where it was dense with fog. The crew members folded the sails and lowered the anchor as In-gong's party looked around. Then he heard Green Wind's voice,

"Master, it is strange. I seem to have become stronger."

He was startled by Green Wind's voice and shook his head. It wasn't because of her semi-solid state, but because he had woken up from a type of trance. It didn't end there, and Chris looked around with confusion.

"Ghosts?"

There were shapes in the fog, and they were spirits of the wind in a semi-solid state. There was also the figure of a woman and a beautiful animal.

“There is also that.”

Caitlin pointed to a distant place where a bunch of fire spirits were swirling around in the mist. In-gong exchanged looks with Felicia, who explained,

“The concentration of magic power in the fog is great. Those children weren’t summoned here. Thanks to the power of the fog, they made themselves.”

Green Wind nodded. It seemed like the area was so rich in magic power that she unknowingly took a solid form.

“Now, do you know why this is the capital of the dark elves?”

Felicia asked again, and Chris nodded.

“Indeed. The dark elves have a huge affinity towards spirits, so this land is like a blessed fortress for them.”

“This is a story from when the first fairy king was still guarding us.”

The land where the first fairy king established his kingdom had been the home of the dark elves for thousands of years. The tomb of the past kings were also on this land, meaning they were guarded by their ancestors. After talking about the fog, they were ready to disembark. As soon as the stairs were set up, Chris wanted to descend straight away, but Felicia stopped him.

“Noonim?”

Instead of answering, Felicia turned to look at Silvan walking out of a room with 3rd Queen Sylvia.

“We will go down first.”

Felicia winked before joining Silvan and Sylvia. They descended the stairs at a quick pace under Silvan’s guidance and then turned back toward the Black Flame Dragon.

By this time, In-gong could see what Felicia—no, the Queen of the Dark Elves and her children were planning to do.

Felicia and Silvan stood with Sylvia in the middle, then dozens of dark elves surrounded them. It was a welcoming ceremony.

“Children of the demon king, who are like my own children, welcome to the land of the dark elves.”

Sylvia opened both arms widely. It was a welcome from the Queen of the Dark Elves.

In-gong smiled at the sight of 3rd Queen Sylvia, Silvan, and Felicia quickly descending the stairs just for the welcoming ceremony. They were a really cute family—no, a really cute mother and children.

After the welcoming ceremony, a magnificent dinner party was prepared.

The interior of the Dark Elves’ Palace was decorated like a forest, with high ceilings which strengthened the feeling of walking through a forest.

In the middle of the spacious hall, there was a large wooden table with a huge number of plates on it. Unlike the elves, the dark elves weren’t choosy about what to eat, and the food on the plates ranged from greasy meats to sweet snacks.

It was a buffet style party where everyone could pick the food they wanted to eat.

The highlight of the party was Amita, who looked cute and pathetic when they couldn’t reach the food they wanted to eat on the table.

“Amita, I will help you. Please sit on my knees.”

Daphne stepped forward, but Amita jerked back and said,

“It’s okay. The more hungry I am, the more delicious the food will be! Daphne should also dig in!”

Then Amita turned and moved the food with Telekinesis. They were consuming

stamina using Telekinesis while eating, which made them more hungry.

“Master, I can feel the atmosphere of an expert eater from the raccoon.”

“Yes.”

Consuming stamina to make sure they had more room in their stomach... It was enough to give Amita a new title.

Since it was a dinner party which had started late, it was natural to go to bed after it was over.

“Everyone should rest for today. I’ll show you around after you’ve unpacked.”

Felicia said before personally showing In-gong, Chris, and Caitlin to their guest rooms. Everyone was given one large room with a small one attached where their aides could stay. The children of the demon king were each assigned a room close to each other.

“Well, it is good that we don’t have to go back and forth.’

Carack smiled while arranging In-gong’s bed. Even though his hands were rough from army life, it wasn’t an exaggeration to say they looked different when grabbing the bedding.

“Huh? Prince, when did you use the Lucid Dream Pillow so much?”

Carack suddenly asked when he saw the pillow. The surface of the Lucid Dream Pillow indicated the number of times it had been used, and that number had changed from before.

In-gong flinched, while Carack took the posture of a nanny and started scolding him.

“Prince, I know your mind is active when sleeping, but...”

“Carack!”

In-gong jumped up and shouted, but it wasn’t to prevent the sermon. An ordinary orc wouldn’t react, but Carack was different. As soon as he realized that In-gong’s cry was strange, he rushed away from the place where he was standing. At that moment, In-

gong used Dragon Words,

“Ku-pa-ha!”

The Dragon Words didn't stop the shaking in the air. The dark grey beings which had appeared above Carack's head scattered.

“Ghosts?!”

Carack asked urgently, while In-gong opened the mini-map. The number of red dots were increasing.

“They aren't spirits! Banshees!”

“The female ghosts?!”

They were a representative monster of the ghost species. Instead of answering, In-gong gave an order to Green Wind. The first thing to do was to get rid of the banshees forming in the room.

“Green Wind!”

At the same time, a green wind swept through the entire room. After filling the room with her power, Green Wind took a solid form and told In-gong urgently,

“Master, White Eagle is strange. Abseltur's heart feels different from usual.”

White Eagle was like a house for Green Wind. In-gong instantly took White Eagle out of his inventory. Indeed, an extraordinary light was emitting from Abseltur's heart in the center of White Eagle.

“Resonance.”

The heart itself wasn't causing the light. It was a light caused by other forces. If so, what had stimulated Abseltur's heart?

“The fairy king.”

It was all he could think of. Abseltur was a creature created by the fairy king. So, it was

natural if his magic power stimulated Abseltur's heart.

"Is this abnormality due to the heart?"

In-gong shook his head at Carack's desperate question.

"No, it is the opposite. Abseltur's heart isn't the cause. It is just part of the phenomenon."

"Master, the flow of magic power is strange. The fog is becoming thicker."

Green Wind spoke with a pained expression. In-gong closed his eyes and focused on the glow of magic power. Yes, the density of magic power was indeed growing thicker. It obviously wasn't an ordinary situation. This sort of thing had never once occurred in Knight Saga.

The fog started to pour inside the building. As the screams of the banshees could be heard in the distance, Abseltur's heart shook more ominously. What was happening today? Why had the status quo suddenly changed?

"I-Is it because Prince showed up?!"

He wanted to deny it, but he couldn't. It was because the timing was too complicated.

"Kyahhhhhh!"

At that moment, he heard a scream from afar. The voice was so familiar that he couldn't not notice it.

"Felicia!"

In-gong no longer delayed and shot forward like a thunderbolt. He broke down the door and threw himself into the hallway.

Chapter 187

Ghosts #2

The door was broken. Simultaneously, In-gong shot down the hallway while expanding the mini-map. It wasn't hard to find her location because Felicia belonged to the King's Knights.

'Too far away!'

If he used Wind Style, he could get there in a few minutes. However, he felt like a few minutes was still too long. What would he do if something happened in the meantime? In-gong had already lost his temper when he heard Felicia scream. The image of Felicia protecting Silvan from the Famine Knight popped into his head, and he felt a surge of fear.

"Prince!"

Carack shouted from behind him, in attempt to restrain him, but In-gong didn't care.

"Felicia!"

It wasn't a simple call. This was the powerful Call of the King's Knights.

He would normally have refrained from using it because he didn't know what Felicia was doing. However, now wasn't the time to consider such things. The moment he shouted the command, the space in front of him opened, and Felicia was revealed.

"Shock Wave!"

Felicia cast a spell as she appeared in front of In-gong. It was because she had activated the magic the moment that Call was used.

"Shutra?"

Felicia tried to stop the magic when she saw In-gong, but it was already too late. A

powerful shock wave hit In-gong. However, In-gong's body was able to withstand this level of magic. He didn't resist the moment the shock wave struck, but instead of being blown into the air, he used strength to flip and land on the ground.

Normally, a shock wave would cause blood and vomiting, but In-gong was fine. Felicia's attempt to stop the shock wave at the last minute had weakened the magic, but In-gong's durability itself was very high.

"I'm okay! Is Noona okay?"

In-gong asked loudly, and Felicia flinched with surprise before nodding. She looked around in a voice mixed with embarrassment.

"Uh, yes. I see you used Call."

Felicia was reminded of the fight at the 12th base of Curtis. Her breathing was probably rough due to her surprise.

"Princess, what is going on? The fog is strange!"

Carack asked Felicia. No matter how familiar she was with Carack, she could not help but feel fear as the rough looking Carack approached. Felicia flinched again before shouting,

"I don't know. This is the first time this has happened!"

Felicia stayed at the Demon King's Palace more often than at the Dark Elves' Palace, but she had still spent a third of her 20 years at the Sky Forest. This was a phenomenon which had never been present in the records.

"Ku-pa-ha!"

Right then, In-gong used Dragon Words again. Due to the exposed side wall, the fog entered directly and banshees were forming. At that moment, Carack remembered something and took a step closer to Felicia.

"Delia! What is Delia's situation right now?"

She was always with Felicia. Felicia had screamed, so maybe Delia was in a dangerous

situation. However, it was groundless. If there really was a dangerous situation, then Felicia would be the first one to return to Delia.

Felicia replied calmly,

“She will be fine. I wasn’t in danger. I just screamed because I was confused. A banshee suddenly appeared in front of me. So, Delia will be fine. Yes, I bet on it.”

It seemed like Felicia was reassuring herself, rather than Carack. Felicia explained the situation in a bit more detail. According to her, she had been walking along the corridor with Delia and two servants when she encountered a banshee. After hearing about the growing number of banshees, In-gong spoke to Felicia and Carack,

“Then let’s move on. First we need to secure the safety of Caitlin noona.”

After securing Felicia, the next one was Caitlin. Felicia was familiar with ghosts and spirits because she was a magician, but there was no telling how Caitlin would react to the banshees. Caitlin was also a magician, but she could only use some spells for combat support.

Felicia had a subtle expression on her face, but she quickly nodded. She was also concerned about Caitlin. Caitlin’s and Chris’s rooms were somewhat distant from In-gong’s room. If this were an ordinary mansion, the guest rooms would be close to each other, but this was the palace of the dark elves. Moreover, a distinction had been made between males and females, so the gap between rooms was quite substantial.

They saw banshees in the hallway as the magic power of the fog became stronger. The sound of dark elves screaming, not banshees, could be heard in many places.

In-gong gritted his teeth and used Wind Style. Carack and Felicia were together, so it wouldn’t be a big problem to go first. Like Felicia, Caitlin was a member of the King’s Knights, so he had no trouble finding her room. As soon as he arrived at the guest room, In-gong used the divine flame to break through the door.

“Caitlin!”

The moment that In-gong shouted, several banshees exploded before him.

“Shutra.”

Caitlin blinked with surprise and greeted In-gong. There was a considerable number of dead banshees in the room.

“This, pant, before, pant, guess, pant...”

Felicia breathed roughly as she arrived behind him. Caitlin didn’t have blood covering her body like at the time of the Red Lightning tribe mission, but In-gong was reminded of that time. Even Seira standing beside her was unharmed.

‘Indeed.’

In-gong thought Caitlin was scared of ghosts, but that was a mistake. Rather, Caitlin’s eyes were shining like lanterns. It was at this moment that there was a deafening roar from behind them.

“Ca-it-li-n!”

It was Chris. Felicia covered her ears reflexively with a frown while, In-gong grabbed Caitlin’s hand.

“Oppa!”

Chris sighed with relief as he scanned Caitlin up and down after arriving. However, shortly after that, he turned toward Felicia who was still breathing roughly and grabbed her.

“Felicia noonim, what the hell is happening?”

It was a sharp voice, almost like he was interrogating her. Chris was terribly agitated. However, this wasn’t simply due to the attack of the banshees. It was because the phenomenon that created the banshees was getting stronger.

“I don’t know! This is the first time!”

Felicia hit Chris’ hands several times before correcting her posture. In-gong sandwiched himself between Chris and Felicia and said,

“We need to send people to Amita and Daphne.”

In-gong, Chris, and Caitlin were on the same floor, but Amita and Daphne were on a different floor. However, Felicia shook her head.

“They will be fine. The two of them are sharing a room, and Daphne is good with spirits. Karma as well.”

There were two druids there, so it shouldn’t be a problem. Additionally, Amita wasn’t simply a raccoon who liked eating. They were a powerful magician and priest of the last flame, so they could deal with dozens of banshees at once.

In-gong was convinced of this and nodded. Then Caitlin, who was still holding In-gong’s hand, asked,

“Silvan oppa?”

“He won’t have a problem. The important thing is to break this situation itself.”

Instead of Felicia, Chris replied. The power of life was a natural enemy to ghosts like the banshee. It was unlikely that Silvan, who was strong with aura, would be at risk. 3rd Queen Sylvia was the ruler of the dark elves and would likely have guards around here. Moreover, Sylvia was a powerful magician, so Felicia didn’t need to worry.

As a certain degree of comfort was restored, the agitation of the group subsided and reason was restored. However, they couldn’t relax.

“Master, the height of the fog keeps on increasing.”

Green Wind spoke in an uneasy voice as she looked far away. He hadn’t noticed due to the excitement, but once he closed his eyes and concentrated, he could feel the density of magic power was becoming thicker and higher.

What would happen if this situation continued?

Right now, only banshees were appearing. However, as the density of magic power increased, more powerful monsters might appear. The banshees weren’t a threat to the party. Even if stronger ghosts appeared, the situation wasn’t likely to change. However, it wasn’t the same for the ordinary dark elves in the palace. This situation could result in an enormous loss of life.

Everybody looked at each other, but none of them could open their mouths.

At that moment, In-gong opened his inventory and pulled out White Eagle. Just like before, an ominous light shone from Abseltur's heart which was embedded in White Eagle.

"Shutra?"

Chris asked hurriedly when he saw the modified White Eagle. In-gong replied as he stared at Abseltur's heart which was emitting a red light instead of the usual green light.

"This is Abseltur's heart."

The moment that In-gong said this, Felicia made a startled expression as she looked between In-gong and the heart.

"Heok! Surely, this isn't because of Shutra?! Shutra is too much!"

Chris and Caitlin also seemed resentful. In-gong sighed at Felicia's words and explained,

"I'm not the cause. Abseltur's heart is just reacting to the phenomenon."

"It's reacting? Are you referring to Creature Abseltur?"

Chris asked quickly. In-gong was surprised.

"You know about him?"

"I only know that he dealt the dark elves a massive blow in the past. Beyond that, I don't know any more."

Chris' hobby was collecting stories of heroes and battles from various places. So, it was natural for him to hear the name. In-gong gazed at Felicia, and she explained while fanning her face furiously with her hands, like she was trying to cool down.

"Abseltur is a creature made by the first fairy king. He was a guardian when the fairy

king was still alive but revealed his evil nature after the fairy king died. Anyway, if Abseltur's heart is responding, then that means...

"It is clear that this incident has a connection to the first fairy king."

Felicia nodded at In-gong's words. The name, Abseltur, was notorious, so she thought the cause of this incident was Abseltur's heart. However, that was irrational. It was more likely that Abseltur's heart was reacting to something, just like In-gong said.

"Master, it is better to keep moving. The fog is starting to have a constant flow now. It will soon become a whirlwind."

Green Wind spoke in a strained voice. He couldn't directly see the situation outside, but it seemed like the wind was becoming stronger.

In-gong closed his eyes and focused on the flow of magic power. It was just as Green Wind said; a flow of gigantic fog was covering the whole Sky Forest, but it was still slow. As gandharvas were sensitive to all flow, it wasn't difficult to feel the movements. However, it was becoming faster. He didn't know how long it would continue to accelerate, but it seemed like a big disaster was soon about to happen.

"Go underground."

Felicia declared. She couldn't read the flow of magic, so she trusted In-gong and Green Wind. Instead of spending time on verification, the top priority was resolving the immediately situation.

"The tomb of the kings is in the basement of the palace. The first fairy king's tomb is there, so we might be able to find a clue."

The magic fog had been here before the first fairy king set up his kingdom. So, there was no guarantee that this phenomenon was linked to the fairy king. However, Abseltur's heart was responding to something. Moreover, the tombs of the ancestors in the basement of the palace weren't simple tombs; powerful magic circles were engraved there.

The tomb of the first fairy king was the starting point of all those magic circles. So, it was worth taking a look.

“Let’s go.”

Chris growled, and Caitlin nodded. The party, with Felicia in the lead, headed underground.

Chapter 188

Ghosts #3

The restraining force weakened.

As it had existed for so long, nobody knew when the thin film covering the Demon World was being torn bit by bit.

It hadn't started today or yesterday. Instead, it had happened step by step, so nobody was aware. It was just like raindrops soaking a collar.

The Sky Forest wasn't small, and the thick mist filled the entire palace as well as the residences of the dark elves.

The fog of the Sky Forest was a routine for the dark elves. They had lived in the fog for a long time, so they didn't fear it.

However, today was different; screams of dark elves pierced through the thick fog which made it hard to see.

Simultaneously, howls swallowed up the screams. Banshees were howling all over the sky and land, which meant the cries of the dark elves didn't reach each other. In the midst of the ear-splitting noises, the dark elves fell into a sense of isolation.

Little children cried for their mothers, and mothers tried to find their children. The dark elves lost their way in the fog. Some moved deep underground to avoid the fog, while others ran in the direction they thought the palace was.

The fog was moving, but the dark elves were still unaware of this phase. They couldn't know.

3rd Queen Sylvia Doomblade's breathing was rough. It was bedtime, so she was just wearing a thin nightgown, but now wasn't the time to put on clothes.

Sylvia moved at a quick pace to the ruler's office, which was at the highest point of the Dark Elves' Palace.

Many people rushed toward the queen as she moved, joining in order to protect her, while others left to perform tasks at the queen's command.

The knights of the palace formed a thick wall around Sylvia, who tried to figure out what was happening as she moved. Whether it was due to the abnormally strong magic power of the fog or the shrieking of the banshees, any communication magic was unstable. Her magic wasn't able to see the situation of each floor properly.

Aside from the five guards who protected the queen, the rest of the guards moved down. Sylvia wasn't stupid. This was the inside of the palace, so it was easy to guess what was happening outside the palace as it was directly exposed to the fog. The defense of the palace was a problem, but she also needed to protect the people of Sky Forest. There should only be a minimal number of people inside the palace.

"Your Majesty, the Queen!"

A familiar voice pierced her ears, and Sylvia turned sharply to see Delia. Sylvia imagined all types of horrible things after seeing Delia appear alone without Felicia. Delia hurriedly spoke when she saw Sylvia's pale face.

Delia explained that Felicia was with 9th Prince and the other children of the demon king. She had heard they were moving down, so she was going to descend and join them.

Sylvia was momentarily puzzled about how the 9th Prince had instantly moved Felicia to his side, but she suppressed her curiosity. Felicia was safe if she was with 9th Prince. Additionally, the 7th Prince and 8th Princess were highly respected fighters, so her heart calmed.

Sylvia's complexion was restored as she headed up. As she climbed up into the fog, the number of banshees popping out was greatly reduced. However, the news they got from new people who joined them wasn't great. Stronger ghosts were appearing on the lower floors.

Sylvia's footsteps quickened. Those who ran ahead opened the door to her office.

The king's office, located at the highest point of the Dark Elves' Palace, was also the royal hall. Like a real forest, the floor was covered with dirt, and the walls and ceilings were covered with tree branches. The coldness of the earth touched her bare feet, but it calmed her mind.

Sylvia had hastened to reach the king's office because it was the backbone of the palace. At the king's office, it was possible to see the situation both inside and outside the palace.

The throne was in the middle of the office, and like the throne of the demon king, it was placed on a high podium. A large tree grew behind the throne, making it look like the throne was part of the tree.

Sylvia sat on the throne. Then the tree branches stretched gently around the throne to wrap around Sylvia's arms, legs, neck, and waist. Sylvia looked at the sight before her as many things popped into her head.

Fortunately, there wasn't much damage to the inside of the palace. Due to the magic power in the fog becoming stronger, the power of the spirits had also increased. Instead of scattering, the dark elves gathered at the center of each floor, while the guards opened the palace doors and accepted the people.

'Silvan!'

Sylvia screamed silently. Silvan was rushing toward the Black Flame Dragon which was completely buried in fog. Sepira and the crew members were yelling as they followed behind Silvan reluctantly. Sylvia was worried but decided to believe in Silvan. The Black Flame Dragon was also a treasure of the dark elves, so it should be protected.

She tried to find Felicia next, but the information coming from the tree branches distracted her. Sylvia closed her eyes, then she looked down at the palace from a high place.

The fog was growing. The density of magic power was also increasing. However, that wasn't the important thing. A flow was occurring in the fog. It started to flow in a

certain direction and was drawn into a huge circle. The fog was gathering, and it seemed like a giant vortex would soon be created.

The palace was at the heart. Maybe the palace would be safe in the eye of the storm. However, what about the outside of the palace? What about everybody in Sky Forest?

Sylvia's eyes flashed. Heavy winds started to blow outside the palace, and Thunder and lightning ripped through the night sky. However, that wasn't all. The abnormally high density of magic power didn't just cause ghost-based monsters.

Sylvia gulped, shaking unintentionally. A horrible future was painted in her head.

Hundreds of banshees were screaming at the same time. The chorus of screams was enough to destroy the spirit. However, the dark elves gathered in one place didn't go crazy or feel afraid of the screams because they were protected.

"Leave it to this Amita!"

An enormous power radiated from Amita as they shouted with both arms wide open. It was Amita's powerful ward magic.

"Amita!"

Daphne cried out with admiration at the translucent wall of magic which prevented dozens of banshee screams. Amita, who was sweating, banged their tail against the floor.

"I will protect Daphne! Karma as well, so don't be afraid!"

Daphne, Karma, and the dark elves gained strength from Amita. Indeed, Amita was a truly trustworthy raccoon. In order to reassure everyone, Amita forced a brighter expression onto their face. Even the ghosts, which were more powerful than banshees, didn't dare cross the barrier of divine power.

Daphne and Karma weren't quiet either. The two druids and the dark elves used the spirits; spirits of fire appeared outside the magic ward and destroyed the banshees. It wasn't bad, so the dark elves couldn't help smiling a little bit.

However, the one who had created such an atmosphere, Amita, wasn't laughing. This situation wasn't simply hard. They had fought for a lifetime, so they felt something unusual.

"Amita?"

Daphne felt the same thing. She rushed toward Amita, while Amita made a shocked expression. They exclaimed hurriedly,

"Stop using the spirits! Karma! Everyone!"

It was an incomprehensible command, but Karma, who was familiar with Amita, cut off her spirits. However, the dark elves didn't, and this was their big downfall.

The dark elves operating the spirits screamed. Those using fire spirits were burned, while those with wind spirits had their bodies hacked.

Daphne started sweating, and Amita's face distorted.

The spirits had gone crazy. They escaped from the control of the dark elves and started to run wild.

"Princess! Heads up! This place is dangerous!"

"Get out of the way!"

Felicia shouted at the guards blocking her way. In-gong used Telekinesis to push the guards aside, and the demon king's children continued moving. The party was still too high up. As the density of magic power increased, jumping down the floating disks took too long.

"Take the shortcut! Follow me!"

It wasn't Felicia but Chris who yelled. Felicia's eyes widened with surprise, but she soon cursed. Chris had used aura to destroy the floor.

“Go!”

He threw his body through the open hole. Caitlin and Seira were right behind him, but Felicia was stunned. It was too high for her to jump. However, there was no time to delay. While Felicia was hesitating, In-gong grabbed her and hoisted her over his shoulder. Carrying a princess like this wasn't appropriate, but the situation wasn't good.

In-gong and Carack jumped down the hole, while Felicia moaned from the impact of the landing. However, there was no time to recover from it. Chris had already made a new hole, and In-gong continued jumping down.

The height of one floor in the Dark Elves' Palace was seven meters tall, so by jumping through the holes, they could go down dozens of meters.

“Almost there! It is here!”

Felicia screamed as they continued going down. Caitlin stopped from where she was about to break the floor, and Felicia fell breathlessly from In-gong's shoulder.

“The entrance to the catacombs, over there.”

As Felicia raised her hand to point in a direction, In-gong hoisted Felicia up again. There was no time to complain, so Felicia just held on while In-gong ran with the mini-map open. The dark elves were surprised to see Felicia being carried, but no one stopped them. However, it wasn't due to the dreadful momentum created by Chris; the ground floor was already a crucible of confusion.

Due to the effect of the fog, the number of banshees and ghosts was high. To make matters worse, some of the spirits were running wild. Most of the dark elves were heading up from the ground floor, so they were different from In-gong's party that was heading downwards.

Felicia trembled in fear from her position on In-gong's shoulder. If this was the situation inside the palace, then what was happening outside? She felt like crying at the thought of the dark elves living in Sky Forest.

“We're here! Door!”

Chris shouted. The door was big enough to almost reach the ceiling. It was a door which opened on either side, and its state was like that of a castle in the middle of a siege. The door's latch seemed like it would break at any minute.

"Princess!"

One soldier shouted at Felicia who was hanging on In-gong's shoulder. In-gong put Felicia down, while Chris and Caitlin raised their auras.

"We are going to open the door to the tombs! Avoid it!"

The soldiers seemed to be the guards protecting the entrance to the tombs. Instinctively, Carack knew what was happening inside, and Siera was no different.

The banshees and ghosts were already there. Since it was a grave site, there would be a massive number of ghosts.

The door shook again. The door hinges seemed like they would break before the latch.

"Back off! We will cope with it from here!"

In-gong shouted. Felicia regained her spirit and gave the same order to the guards.

"Shutra!"

Caitlin looked at In-gong. Instead of responding, In-gong looked at the door and pulled out the power of Conquest. He released it and shouted,

"Green Wind!"

It wasn't a simple call. This was a command. Green Wind, who had been upgraded to an apostle, appeared above everyone's head and emanated a divine power.

She glared at the door. The hinges were cracking, and the door broke open with a loud sound!

"Below the King's Flag!"

In-gong yelled and lifted the flag. At that moment, an enormous white light poured

toward the front. The apostle Green Wind created divine winds, and the dozens of banshees and ghosts couldn't survive. They shattered into dozens and hundreds of pieces.

However, the insides of the tombs were still full of a unique power. There was already fog just past the door, and new banshees were pouring out from the fog. The group had to rush in now. It was clear that the underground tombs were closely related to this phenomenon.

Felicia ordered the guards to flee, while In-gong took a deep breath and once again activated the power of Apostle Appointment.

“Carack!”

Chapter 189

Ghosts #4

The power of Conquest filled Carack's body, then it became enormous. Carack already had a height of two meters, but he had now become three meters tall with expanded muscles.

The clothes he wore tore apart, but Amita's armour expanded to wrap around his body. It was a partial body armour, but there didn't seem to be any problem with defense.

Everybody was surprised by Carack's sudden transformation. Seira blushed when she saw Carack's torn pants, but it only lasted for a moment. Now wasn't the time to stare at Carack.

Carack read In-gong's intentions straight away. He added extra parts to Amita's shield and made it huge before grabbing it firmly. This time, it was Carack who led the party.

Felicia was reminded of the charge in Thunderdoom Fortress, and she quickly explained it to Chris, Caitlin, and Seira. Then she stood behind Carack's back, and Chris, Caitlin, and Seira stood behind her with In-gong and Green Wind at the rear.

"May the Protection of the Wind bless all of you."

Green Wind blessed everyone in the party. Then In-gong raised the flag of light again, while Chris paused for a moment before carrying Felicia who was in front of him.

"Run!"

"Kuraha!"

Carack responded to In-gong's command with his battle cry. He rushed forward ignorantly, smashing everything blocking his way.

It was like watching a runaway locomotive. The fog was thick, so the path up ahead

wasn't visible, but In-gong saw it using the mini-map. Then Green Wind shared In-gong's directions with Carack. Caitlin ran like the wind and looked around as the hands and heads of ghouls and skeletons suddenly popped out from the ground.

The scene was approaching its climax. If this continued, then maybe even a vampire might be created.

"Ohhhhhh!"

Carack shouted again. They sprinted along the ramp, destroying all doors which blocked their way.

"How many floors down are there?"

"10 floors! The 10th floor is the lowest floor!"

At Chris' cry, Felicia shouted her answer. The two people had been siblings for dozens of years, but this was the first time they exchanged words from such a close proximity.

"Carack is amazing!"

Caitlin cried out suddenly. It seemed to be a cheer, but it was effective. Carack's muscles swelled up again, and his running speed increased.

Then In-gong looked at the mini-map. Red dots were surrounding them on all sides. If they stopped for even a moment, they would be surrounded by hundreds or thousands of enemies.

The configuration of the catacombs was different from the palace. In the case of the palace, important rooms were decorated like forests. There was a lot of soil on the ground, so it could truly be mistaken for a forest.

However, the catacombs were different. Although the floor was covered with dirt, the walls and ceilings were made of cool, hard rocks. It was reminiscent of an underground tunnel, rather than a forest.

In-gong could feel the flow of fog outside the palace becoming stronger. It was already like a whirlpool or water running swiftly.

“Next is the 10th floor!”

“Karaaha!”

Felicia shouted. Carack smashed down the door as well as the undead monsters behind it.

The last staircase was especially long. The length between the bottom floor and the one above it seemed to be 20 meters.

Felicia used recovery magic. Simultaneously, everybody recovered their breaths and looked around them. There was no fog on the bottom floor of the catacombs. There were also no ghost monsters like banshees and specters, or undead monsters like ghouls and skeletons.

The only things there were the dark soil and the tree trunks which covered the wall. The trees were tinted grey instead of green. Then there were green flames which became one to push away the darkness.

The lowest floor of the catacombs was a large space. In-gong had visited it in Knight Saga before. The first fairy king was one of Knight Saga’s hidden bosses. When Zephyr appeared on the lowest floor, bathed in the blood of the dark elves, a specter of the fairy king had appeared.

Carack breathed in deeply. Chris and Caitlin walked to the sides, while Seira followed behind Caitlin.

The lowest floor was only for the first fairy king. In the center of the lowest floor, there was a high altar with a magnificent coffin made of stone. It was just that—the first fairy king’s tomb.

“Master.”

Green Wind spoke in a strained voice. As the previous apostle of Conquest as well as having been made from a fragment of the elder dragon, Ainkel who had the power of life, Green Wind felt a mighty and evil power coming from the tomb in front of her.

In-gong felt the same thing. Moreover, In-gong could perceive there was a mix of other powers. There was a bit of strong magic power along the edge of the tomb, but it was

mixed with the blue aura of Death.

The lid of the stone coffin shook, and there was a huge roar as the ashes inside shot out.

“Callael...”

Felicia said mournfully.

Callael Kalseph, the name of the first fairy king and the ancestor of the dark elf, Lionel Doomblade... His remains were waking up. He had died thousands of years ago, so his bones and clothes were all gone.

Yet, flesh grew from the ashes. However, it wasn't real. In the first place, the bones weren't real. Everything had been created from magic power. It was the same with the banshees and specters.

He wasn't an apostle of Death. However, it was clear that the specter in front of them had been touched with the power of Death. Although Death hadn't been used directly to raise the specter, it had some type of influence.

In-gong sensed it intuitively. The presence before them, the specter of the first fairy king, was much stronger than the man they had encountered at Thunderdoom Fortress.

The fairy king looked down at the party who were prepared to fight. Like Silvan, one of the fairy king's eyes was covered with an eyepatch, and he lifted it up slowly. A huge storm of magic power suddenly pushed at the party.

“Kuraha!”

Carack stood in front of everybody and let out a battle cry as the magic power storm swept all around them. Felicia looked up from where she was hiding behind Carack, while Chris and Caitlin looked hurriedly at the tomb where the fairy king had been standing.

However, the fairy king wasn't there anymore. He looked toward the sky and rose up.

Seira made a puzzled expression, and Caitlin looked bemused. However, Green Wind

was different; she trembled. The fog started to move along with the fairy king. The fairy king rose, and the fog of magic rose as well. Outside the palace, a huge vortex had finally formed.

What would happen if the fog and the fairy king combined? What the hell would happen?

The fog of magic was pushed toward the lowest floor. Beneath the floors, the undead raised their heads as banshees and specters appeared.

“Damn! We just came all the way down here!”

Chris growled out. At that moment, there was a huge vibration in the catacombs. It was like an earthquake.

“Prince!”

Carack shouted, and In-gong understood. The ceiling was crumbling down. If they stood still there, they would be crushed.

“Gather!”

After gathering everyone together, In-gong looked up at the ceiling. He aimed at the wreckage which was beginning to pour down toward them!

“Break!”

This wasn’t simply Dragon Words. It became Dragon Breath, and the power of great destruction rushed toward the ceiling.

A giant pillar of white light swallowed up the collapsed debris. It continued up, penetrating completely through the ceiling.

Just considering the momentum, it contained a destructive force which seemed like it could penetrate toward the sky. None of the dark elves on the ground level had been caught up in it, and the group’s purpose was achieved.

This time, Chris was the one carrying Felicia on his shoulder. Carack and Chris jumped toward the hole in the ceiling, followed by Caitlin and Seira.

Felicia screamed as they soared up toward the ground.

In-gong then immediately followed on White Eagle. He grabbed the back of Carack, who was about to fall, and looked up.

The fairy king kept on rising, and In-gong had to catch up with him.

The fog of magic increased around the palace. The fog, which covered Sky Forest entirely, was gathered toward the center.

The sight of Sky Forest, with the fog removed, was grim; there was pandemonium everywhere.

They would rather it be covered by the fog. The survivors, freed from the sense of isolation caused by the fog, screamed when they saw numerous corpses. However, there was something even more terrible.

The dark elf knight, who had cut the throat of a friend minutes ago, looked up at the sky with a blank face.

The fog of magic was touching the sky. No, it couldn't be called a fog anymore.

A gigantic vortex of magic power was opening in the sky.

Amita trembled, but it wasn't simply because they feared the mighty magic power.

Amita remembered Kafran, the guardian of Spider Forest, and the story of the guardians who had been murdered by the people with a purple aura.

'Why?'

Amita didn't know, but the phenomenon occurring before them felt like it had some

connection with past events. Amita erased the thoughts from their head and poured magic power into the ward. The only thing they could do right now was protect Delia, Karma, and the dark elves.

“I believe in you!”

Amita recalled In-gong’s face.

Sylvia sat on the throne and looked up at the sky. The retractable ceiling was open, so she could see clearly the spiral of magic power in the night sky.

Blue lightning struck, thunder exploded, and terrible magic power radiated from the vortex.

Sylvia didn’t know what was going to happen from now on. How should she break this crisis?

“Your Majesty.”

Sylvia thought of the demon king, but her love, who was the strongest in the world, wasn’t here in this place.

It was at this moment that the tree trunks connected to Sylvia’s left arm sent her new images. However, Sylvia looked at what was in front of her, instead of the images, as strong magic power rose from below.

What she saw was a ghost. At the same time, it was also a great man. It was the soul of the great king who had tried to protect the dark elves. His will had been destroyed, but his mighty strength had still been left behind.

He broke through the ground and soared up. It was the first fairy king, the ghost of the great Callael. However, it was distorted, and the phrase ‘ruin’ was appropriate.

Sylvia used her magic power instinctively. She sensed that she couldn’t let the presence before her continue.

However, that wasn’t enough. There was a strong rebound from the magic power she

gathered urgently. The guards moved hurriedly to protect Sylvia, but the fairy king didn't attack her. He just kept on rising toward the swirl of magic power.

Sylvia looked up at the sky in pain.

The loud sound of thunder tore through the sky. Thus, another sound was buried—the sound of someone rushing up to catch up with Callael. It sounded like hundreds of wings flapping at once.

Dark blue smoke covered the sky. It united and blocked the path of the fairy king, who was heading toward the vortex of magic power!

The fairy king looked at In-gong, who looked back at him. Instead of delaying again, In-gong immediately activated his divinity.

“Spiritualism.”

Dhrtarastra...

The gandharva god descended.

Chapter 190

Ghosts #5

There was someone looking up, and he started moving as he watched from a distance.

In-gong's black hair... It was long, like a stroke of the night sky had been drawn. The white divinity was like the sun. However, instead of being dispelled, the specter of the fairy king released magic power.

Divinity and magic power clashed. They pushed each other, causing flashes of light and a deafening roar in the process.

The fairy king roared angrily, and In-gong also shouted without hesitation. He pulled back a fist and gathered aura and divinity together.

While In-gong was doing this, Green Wind defended him. As a goddess of the wind through Apostle Appointment, she stood beside In-gong, who had awakened as a gandharva god, and pushed with her own strength.

The fairy king was powerful, but In-gong's divinity was also powerful. Moreover, divinity was a direct power. It was the nemesis of those who twisted the natural world. Green Wind pushed out with her unique magic power, while the white divinity pressured the fairy king.

'Don't waste time.'

In-gong had to settle it here. The damage which had already occurred was enormous. Additionally, the vortex of magic power in the sky needed to be resolved as well. In-gong shouted and punched out with a fist which contained the power of destruction.

However, at this moment, when he was about to attack, time seemed like it was stopped. Sylvia looked up at the sky and screamed. Despite the fairy king in front of them, Green Wind and In-gong were forced to look up.

The sky had opened. Thunder and lightning struck around the giant magic vortex which was several hundred meters in diameter, and something extended from its center. It was a huge arm of light—a huge mass of overwhelming magic power.

‘Master!’

The giant’s fist pierced through the vortex and headed straight toward the palace. In-gong broke off from his thoughts and immediately turned his body. He held Kalteins’ equipment, Night Watch in his hand, and the blue cloth swelled up and created momentum.

In-gong looked at the magic vortex. The massive arm was in the center, and it didn’t end with just one arm. He could guess what was beyond it.

“Shoot!”

While everyone was frozen, there was a shout. A black flying ship rose from the outside of the palace.

It was the Black Flame Dragon. Fire poured from the dark elf ship, and a red column of light poured out from the majestic masthead at the front. However, it didn’t reach. Just before it reached the giant arm, the red column of light twisted and headed to another place. It was pushed elsewhere, away from the ridiculously strong magic power. The twisted red pillar shot to the edge of the vortex created by the magic fog, and it was absorbed as well.

The Black Flame Dragon turned in midair. This wasn’t due to fear of the giant arm but to prepare for a second attack. However, the giant arm didn’t stay still. As it grabbed the air, golden magic power formed. It was like lightning.

Everyone looked at the sky, and they couldn’t even scream. Lightning, the purest power, poured from the sky like a punishment from the gods! The giant arm sprinkled lightning, and it rained down toward the palace. The moment that the catastrophe approached...

In-gong moved. He poured his attack toward the lightning.

“Tr-ue Des-truct-ion!”

It was the white of destruction against the golden lightning. The power of the Great Enkidu exploded along with the divinity. The explosion occurred in the sky.

Intense light erased the night. It was a white darkness that blinded everyone. The roar disturbed their ears, and the aftermath of the destruction caused the two powers to splinter into hundreds of pieces. The moment passed, and the white light disappeared again. The giant arm was pushed back, and In-gong stumbled in the air.

Thunder struck, while Green Wind hugged In-gong from behind and supported him. The figure of the fairy king had become blurred.

In-gong, who shared his senses with Green Wind, understood immediately.

It already existed. The specter of the fairy king and the vortex in the sky were already one.

The loud sound of thunder tore through the sky, and another arm stretched from the center of the vortex. The two arms spread apart across the vortex as if it were a hole. The sky opened, and from the center of the vortex, a head was exposed.

It looked at In-gong as it also looked down at the palace from above.

The runaway spirits all looked at the same place. Even the ghosts, who were howling with hatred, shut up and raised their heads to the sky.

Amita knew. It was invisible, but they could feel it. There was also a deity... In-gong and a god created by magic power.

The last flame whispered to Amita. They trembled with fear as their tail sagged down.

Silence enveloped the palace, and there was a group running in there.

“Omamama!”

Felicia shouted from Chris’ shoulder. Chris, who had barely reached the top floor, stared up at the sky, while Caitlin’s mouth dropped open. However, thanks to the flag

of light that Carack was holding, they weren't overwhelmed. The power of Conquest didn't allow them to be ruled by something else.

Felicia's call broke the silence, and Sylvia regained her spirit. She remembered a piece of knowledge which had been buried deep in her memories.

That was a demonic god. The first fairy king had prepared it to defend the land of the dark elves.

In fact, this was the first time he had actually shown up. The second fairy ruler, the eldest daughter of the fairy king, had an unexpected death. The original plan had been for her to complete the magic spell which the first fairy king had failed to complete.

Sylvia continued thinking, then she made a decision as a queen.

'Give up the fog of Sky Forest.'

The fog of magic power originally existed in Sky Forest, but it wasn't at this scale in the beginning. The first fairy king had strengthened the magic fog. The magic power harvested from the dark elves who lived in the Sky Forest was also added to the magic fog.

At first, it was insignificant. However, thousands of years had passed, and the magic power in the fog was now incomparable to what it had been originally. The magic fog had acted as a solid barrier which protected Sky Forest for thousands of years. As queen of the dark elves, Sylvia knew this. However, she had to give it up. The power of the magic fog had to be crushed in order to stop the demon god in front of her eyes.

Sylvia didn't worry and made her decision at that moment. The tree branches covered Sylvia's entire body on the throne. At that moment, dozens of message magic spread at the same time.

-Destroy the strongholds of magic hidden in Sky Forest. Disrupt the magic power that is strengthening the fog and break the power of the magic fog itself.

Chris opened his eyes. His political knowledge meant he immediately understood the decision Sylvia had made and what it meant. Felicia stared at Sylvia, who exclaimed decisively,

“Go!”

There was no time. They didn’t know when the second attack of the demonic god would come. Nobody knew if In-gong could stop it again.

Chris and Caitlin exchanged glances. Sylvia’s message stated that there were five magic strongholds. So, they had to move individually to destroy the strongholds scattered throughout Sky Forest.

Chris threw Felicia, who he had been carrying on his shoulder, toward Caitlin. Caitlin snatched Felicia, who then hugged Caitlin’s neck tightly and cast a flying spell. Caitlin looked up at In-gong one more time before throwing herself out the window.

Chris was no different. He breathed in deeply and concentrated on the lycanthrope blood flowing through his body. After the battle with Gerard, he had triggered a new power. As a mixed race, he didn’t have a complete Beast Form. However, it was possible to bring out the power of the beast. Chris’ teeth and claws sharpened, and the muscles of his body swelled. The golden hairs growing on his body also became more abundant. Chris threw himself out the window without any flying magic. He ran down the outer wall and reached the ground in an instant.

Carack moved with Seira. His method of moving to the ground was like Chris’, but it was much more intense and rough. Seira used Beast Form on Carack’s back and glared at the ghosts and undead covering the ground.

Three of the five strongholds were set. The Black Flame Dragon was headed toward the fourth magic stronghold. The last place would be left to the guards. They bowed to Sylvia and immediately left the office.

There were now only a few people were left on the top floor with Sylvia. The tree branches stretching from the throne didn’t stop at Sylvia’s body but pierced her skin.

Sylvia looked up at the sky and concentrated the remaining power of the palace in one place. She watched the confrontation between the demonic god and In-gong.

In-gong understood Sylvia’s plan. The only thing left was to buy some time. He needed to protect the Dark Elves’ Palace from the ruthless power of the demonic god.

The demonic god was like a man hanging upside down. His huge upper body was emerging from the center of the magic vortex. The distance between the head of the demonic god and the top floor of the palace was only dozens of meters, and the upper body of the demon god was much larger than the top floor of the palace. It could literally crush the top floor with one hand if it reached out.

In-gong laughed bitterly. The thought of running away didn't cross his mind at all.

Since when had this happened? Was it because Sylvia, Amita, Daphne and Karma were in the palace?

'Conquer!'

The white woman shouted. In-gong nodded and drew on the power of divinity. He gathered the power of Conquest, magic power, aura, and divinity together.

'Go!'

In-gong rose up. The demonic god only had one eye. A light shone in the place where the right eye should be, similar to the fairy.

"Break!"

In-gong combined Dragon Breath with Dragon Words and aimed it at the demonic god. The demonic god shouted, and an equally mighty magic power started to split apart the Dragon Breath from that end.

'Master!'

"Ohhhhhh!"

In-gong roared, and the Dragon Breath became bigger. A tight war was waged against the demonic god's magic power.

The fairy inside the demonic god glowed, and the Dragon Breath started splitting apart faster. Sylvia created a huge shield using the power of the palace. In-gong broke the link with Dragon Breath and used Blink.

Dragon Breath was completely smashed into dozens of pieces. Sylvia staggered as the demonic god's magic power hit the shield, while the demonic god used the fairy, instead of predicting where In-gong's Blink would end up. Hundreds of lightning bolts poured down from the magic vortex.

The moment that In-gong appeared, lightning struck. Green Wind moved White Eagle hurriedly and set up a powerful force field. In the middle of the rain of lightning, In-gong gritted his teeth.

Kwaaaaaang!

The lightning struck the ground. The spirits started to run wild again, and the ghosts cried out. The dark elves in Sky Forest fell to the ground and trembled.

'Master!'

Green Wind shrieked with pain while still maintaining the strong force field in the lightning. In-gong used Blink once again. Immediately after escaping from the rain of lightning, he used his last Dragon Breath. The demon god reached out immediately. The demonic god slid both hands over the light pillar and tried to grab it.

Green Wind hugged In-gong from behind as he roared with all his strength. His strong willpower and emotions strengthened the Dragon Words!

Kwa kwang!

There was a sudden explosion from the magic vortex. However, it was different from the thunder. The magic vortex weakened. The pace was slowed down, but it definitely decreased in scale.

Silvan... It was the result of destroying one of the magic strongholds which strengthened the magic fog. Now, only four remained.

The demonic god swung its arms. Dragon Breath started to split apart once again. The fairy shone, and In-gong roared!

Kwakakakakang!

Dragon Breath was smashed, but this time, it worked. The demonic god shrieked as

its two arms were deflected. In-gong quickly pulled out the Heavenly Wind and an elixir from his inventory.

Lightning once again rained from the sky. This time, it was close to an indiscriminate bombing as it struck the ground and palace, not In-gong. However, Sylvia's barrier blocked the rain of lightning. The demonic god cried out louder and waved its arms in the air, causing the magic vortex to swirl rapidly again. Thousands of specters emerged from the swirling fog and rushed to the ground.

This was the demonic god's instinct. It realized that there were people trying to weaken the magic vortex which was its source. In-gong breathed in and grabbed his right arm with his left hand. He thought he would die from the successive Dragon Breaths, but he had to draw the demonic god's attention.

Then Dragon Blood kicked in. In-gong used the power of the elder dragons contained in their equipment. He rushed through the air toward the demonic god. Simultaneously, the demonic god stretched out its hands toward In-gong. This caused the lightning, which was aiming for the ground, to change direction and head toward In-gong.

"Green Wind!"

White Eagle and Black Eagle separated. Black Eagle became Alpha and Beta, which meant three shields now revolved around In-gong. The lightning bounced off, and the demonic god aimed its hand directly at In-gong.

Kwa kwang!

The magic vortex shook again. This was a result of the destruction of the second magic stronghold. The demonic god screamed, and In-gong used Blink to avoid its hands. As he rushed toward the demonic god, he added additional parts to Earth Quaker.

"Gigantic Piston—!"

A giant fist of aura struck the demonic god's chest.

The demonic god's large upper body was broken, but In-gong wasn't safe. The magic power emitted by the demonic god pushed at In-gong's whole body. The demonic god quickly reached out and caught In-gong roughly. In-gong tried to use Blink, but it was

impossible. The demonic god's magic power didn't allow it.

Kwa kwang!

The third magic stronghold was destroyed, but the demonic god didn't let go. Rather, it poured the remaining magic power toward In-gong, who used everything he had to resist it.

Sylvia gritted her teeth as she watched this. So, she tried to save In-gong by turning the shield magic around the palace into an attack.

"Shutra!"

It was Caitlin and Felicia who destroyed the third magic stronghold. Felicia howled and Caitlin's aura exploded as they tried to do something from the ground.

The Black Flame Dragon rushed toward the demonic god. Chris broke through hundreds of specters and finally reached the fourth magic stronghold.

The demonic god stared at In-gong. Then while Sylvia moved her magic power, In-gong squeezed out his divinity.

"Ohhhhhh!"

Chris destroyed the fourth magic stronghold. This time, the explosion was huge and destroyed some of the giant.

Kwakakang!

The swirling magic power once again fluctuated. Four of the five magic strongholds were destroyed, and this was the aftermath. The demonic god, who was pouring magic power toward In-gong, experienced a backlash of magic. In-gong was finally free from the demonic god's hands, and the magic power which formed the barrier around the palace rose toward the demonic god.

"Prince!"

Carack swung his fists and yelled. The last magic stronghold was destroyed. The demonic god shrieked as the magic vortex was weakened to half of its original size.

Then the magic power of the palace struck the demonic god.

In-gong gritted his teeth. Although five of the magic strongholds were destroyed, the demonic god was still powerful. Dragon Breath and True Destruction weren't enough. He had to penetrate the core of that vortex as well as the demonic god with a more powerful force.

However, In-gong could do it. He took deep breaths in midair while the demonic god was distracted by Sylvia's magic power.

Recorder Torres' El Ragra... It was located in Earth Quaker.

In-gong formed a fist and triggered the power of El Ragra!

Chapter 191

Ghosts #6

The elder dragons' equipment were meant for Drakon Kechatulla, not the elder dragons themselves.

So, Recorder Torres had started thinking. The Conquest Knight would be the next generation's Drakon Kechatulla. Simultaneously, they would have the power to subjugate and conquer all things, which meant they would be able to manage the various equipment of the elder dragons.

Thus, Recorder Torres had made his equipment for one purpose.

It would collect... collect and amplify.

This was El Ragra—

The Ring of Conquest.

The demonic god looked at In-gong. The fairy shone, and there was a burst of magic power. It pushed at the magic power of the palace which Sylvia was using.

Sylvia screamed, but she didn't fall down. Instead of falling, she glared at the demonic god. As queen of the dark elves, she had to do her best. Darkness enveloped the palace. She didn't even hold back any magic power to maintain the lighting of the palace. All the magic power of the palace was being used to pressure the demonic god.

Sylvia's body trembled, and the clothes she wore were dirty with blood.

From the beginning, the magic power of the palace was connected to the magic fog. The destruction of the magic strongholds which strengthened the magic fog also affected the palace. The palace was quickly being exhausted of its magic power, so it was impossible to push back the demonic god like this.

However, she could buy some time. The demonic god swung its arms, but Sylvia used the magic power of the palace to restrict it from moving freely.

In-gong took a deep breath. He triggered the power of El Ragra and faced the demonic god. The magic power was fluctuating. There were screams, and it seemed like the sky was going to fall down.

A golden light sprang from Earth Quaker, followed by a bright green light from White Eagle and a dark blue light from Night Watch. In his god state, In-gong activated Dragon Blood. Dragon Style and magic power poured out from the dragon heart.

He formed a fist. The first thing which came out of the end of his fist was aura. Magic power was added and then divinity. The aura became a white ring. It floated slowly over his fist, and a green ring of magic power was created. Dhrtarastra, the gandharva divinity, was a gold and black ring on top.

Three rings were spinning above his fist. They were getting larger and faster. His aura hearts pounded so roughly that it felt like they would all burst.

The demonic god noticed this. The power growing on In-gong's fist was so terrifying that even the demonic god started to feel threatened. Although it had shrunk by half, it was still more than 100 meters in diameter, and lightning poured down from it.

Kwaaaaaang!

It was a splendid sight. The night seemed to split apart and fall to the ground, while Sylvia's maids raised their hands to their heads and cried. Sylvia unleashed the barrier of magic power to block the rain of lightning. She felt an intense pain every time lightning struck the barrier, but she didn't fall.

Chris looked up at the sky. The sight of the lightning was fearsome. Even the ghosts which covered the ground were astonished and couldn't move. Chris moved violently between the ghosts, then he looked up at the sky and shouted loudly,

"Silvan!"

"Ohhhhhh!"

The Black Flame Dragon rode the wind. It moved almost vertically and passed the point where the demonic god's magic power and Sylvia's magic power were colliding.

The three rings above In-gong's right hand became one.

Silvan took off his eyepatch and raised his fist which contained the power of the fairy!

Kwaaaaaang!

There was a loud roar from the Black Flame Dragon as it moved among the lightning bolts. A pillar of red light penetrated the rain of lightning and struck the demonic god.

While the demonic god shook, Caitlin kicked the air as she hugged Felicia, who was using flying magic. The Starlight Core was reacting. Sensing this, Caitlin Moonlight released all her aura.

"Shutra!"

In-gong pulled back his fist. Green Wind hugged In-gong from behind and conveyed the power of White Eagle. An enormous amount of magic power from Abseltur's heart entered In-gong.

The rain of lightning stopped, and Sylvia coughed up blood. The demonic god smashed the red pillar with his arms, and Silvan fell to his knees before activating the fairy again. He regained his vigour and launched another attack at the demonic god.

Then Carack and Seira looked up at the sky as a light streaked across. The lightning thrown by the demonic god struck the Black Flame Dragon, while the red pillar pierced its shoulder.

Sylvia finally completely depleted the magic power of the palace.

In-gong pulled back his fist. As the demonic god grabbed its shoulder, it saw In-gong. Its remaining hand stretched out and used the power of the magic vortex. Then the demonic god grabbed a huge lightning bolt.

Chris took a deep breath. Felicia called out Silvan's name. Caitlin grabbed her chest and focused on the Starlight Core.

It was at that moment that...

The demonic god threw the lightning bolt toward In-gong.

In-gong shouted using Dragon Words. Lightning and divinity rushed angrily toward each other.

A white light extended from In-gong's fist. Strengthened by the tricolour rings, the white light penetrated El Ragra's golden ring. The power was amplified. The white pillar of light grew and collided with the lightning, shattering the lightning and thunder.

The pillar of light didn't stop there. It stretched out and reached the magic vortex. As the pillar of light passed, the demonic god tried to stretch out an arm to stop it. However, it didn't stop. In-gong's attack wasn't over yet!

"Ohhhhhh!"

He let out a fierce Dragon Word containing all of his will. Then In-gong grabbed his right arm with his left hand and swung his right arm. The gigantic pillar of light split apart and attacked both the demonic god and the magic vortex.

Kwaaaaaang!

The pillar of light split the magic vortex apart. The demonic god caught the pillar of light with one hand, and In-gong burned with his divinity. He released all the power he had as the divine humanoid of Dhrtarastra.

The white woman shouted from In-gong's soul, and Green Wind roared along with In-gong.

The demonic god had already consumed a lot of power and couldn't hold on anymore. The arm of the demonic god was destroyed by the pillar of light, and the pillar tore through the magic fog. It stretched out and cut through the demonic god and the sky!

Kwang! Kwang! Kwang! Kwang!

The magic vortex exploded, and the thunderstorm continued. The demonic god couldn't keep its shape anymore. Then there was a gigantic flash which erased the

night. The pillar of light also crumbled. In-gong panted as he held his right arm, and Green Wind had consumed so much power that she could not maintain her solid state anymore.

In-gong swallowed his saliva. His Spiritualism was now released, and the long black hair scattered in the wind, while the golden eyes returned to their original red colour. He felt like he was dying. This was something he definitely didn't want to do twice.

In-gong stretched and waited. Then the clear voice of a woman resonated in his head.

[Your level has risen.]

The voice sounded more exhausted than usual. As the white light, which signalled a level up, surrounded him, the woman's pained voice continued,

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

[Title: Fresh Slayer (Beginner) has been acquired.]

[You have acquired the rights to create volumes of Divine Sura Authority.]

[The level of Divinity has risen.]

[The level of Heavenly Wine has risen.]

[The level of Divine Scent has risen.]

[The level of Pheromones has risen.]

In-gong laughed at the last sentence. He regained his physical strength, but he was so tired that he wanted to sleep. Therefore, In-gong relied on Night Watch and White Eagle to bring his body down. He then closed his eyes and heard Felicia's and Caitlin's voices from afar.

The demonic god were destroyed.

The power left behind by the first fairy king was now diminished, and the magic strongholds which had strengthened the magic fog were destroyed.

The meaning of that wasn't small.

The Black Flame Dragon crash landed. Its proud black wings were broken, but the body itself was relatively unharmed.

Silvan leaned back against the control panel and covered the fairy with his right hand. Thanks to the power of Conquest, it was already stabilized.

As Silvan sighed with relief, his left eye focused on something else. Chris was approaching.

In-gong's body, wrapped in Night Watch, descended slowly and reached the top floor of the palace.

Caitlin, who had been running through the air, rushed toward In-gong. Felicia jumped from Caitlin's arms and burst into tears as she hugged In-gong. After seeing In-gong's face, she felt relief that it was over. Her tension was released, and she didn't hesitate to collapse to the ground.

Instead of sitting down like Felicia, Caitlin stood. However, her tension was released as well.

Sylvia looked at Felicia and Caitlin from the throne. She had lost so much blood that her vision was blurry. Additionally, she was worried about the state of Sky Forest after being separated from the fog of magic power.

Instead of standing up, Sylvia lay on the throne. It was because she couldn't feel Sky Forest.

Daphne and Karma hugged each other with relief, while Amita sighed as their ears and tail sagged.

Why had the ghost of the fairy king run wild at this time? What did it mean?

Amita once again recalled Kafran, guardian of Spider Forest.

The person who was moving hastily stopped in his place, and he wasn't alone. The two people with him also looked up at the sky blankly. They were Beatrice, the incarnation of Mother Earth, and Mercenary King Carlov, called the greatest warrior on the continent.

The night was split apart. It was the only way to describe the sight they saw.

Warrior Locke, who was at the forefront, gulped. He knew it was due to Drakon Kechatulla.

The one who had cut through the night was a Drakon Kechatulla, just like Locke.

It was the Demon World's Drakon Kechatulla.

No, that wasn't all. Locke felt divinity as well. It was clearly divine power.

He couldn't help laughing. It was a smile filled with resilience and relief.

"Truly a monster."

According to Queian, his teacher and father, the Drakon Kechatulla created by the Demon World... was the Conquest Knight.

Locke grabbed the Warrior's Sword at his waist without knowing it. He stood and stared up at the night sky.

Chapter 192

To The North

It was a dark and narrow room.

The War Knight in red armour was sitting before a platform.

There was no opponent on the other side of the game board. However, on the game board, black and white pieces were fighting each other.

The War Knight had been alive for many years. The number of people in the Demon World who had lived longer than him could be counted on one hand. However, the War Knight wasn't as old as the Death Knight. Therefore, the relationship between the War Knight and War was somewhat different from the relationship between the Death Knight and Death.

War looked at the game board through the eyes of the War Knight. The War Knight was silent, and War didn't hate such a knight.

There were many fights and many defeats. War lost some of his apostles. However, that was merely a tactical defeat. From a strategic point of view, the story had changed. War, the red flame-like woman, liked this about war.

The dark elves of Sky Forest had destroyed the magic fog with their own hands. The magic power the first fairy king left behind had disappeared, and there was no longer a magic fog in Sky Forest.

'It was a little surprising.'

She hadn't expected the Death Knight to be defeated. The future the red woman had anticipated was one in which the demonic god self-destructed after exhausting all the magic power in the fog.

The War Knight's hands carried out a move on the board. The singularity, 2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros, was already in the north. Another singularity, the warrior, was

heading toward the north, and he would soon reach.

‘The Conquest Knight will also head north.’

There was no such thing as unconditional victory in a war. There were always many variables which could overthrow the direction of the war. The Conquest Knight had achieved several tactical victories, so his presence was impossible to ignore. Maybe the convergence of two singularities and the Conquest Knight in the north would cause a strategic defeat.

The War Knight moved his hand again. The red woman looked at his fingertips and thought of the places which contained strategic value:

The Demon World’s absolute defense called Aegis Gate;

The Demon King’s Palace located at the heart of the Demon World;

And the Sanctuary.

The red woman let out a long breath, savouring the flames of war which were deep in her chest.

Sky Forest was a mess. As the fog disappeared and the surroundings became clearer, the terrible sight became more vivid.

Beatrice laid down a family of dark elves, who had been slaughtered by the ghouls, next to each other and chanted a short prayer.

She showed no discrimination as her golden magic healed other dark elves.

“Huu.”

Beatrice smiled warmly as she touched the cheek of a dark elf child.

“Locke, what will you do now?”

Beatrice asked, flicking back her golden hair. In order to look like an elf, she wore a

white blouse and leather trousers, instead of a white robe. Additionally, she had given herself long ears by using magic.

Locke shrugged as he pulled an injured person out from a collapsed house.

“I will help here as long as I can. We aren’t too conspicuous yet.”

Locke was dressed in the normal red clothes of a sura. Just like Beatrice was disguised as an elf, he was disguised as a sura. The group had been rescuing the dark elves for hours already. As he said, they were in the remote areas to avoid being noticed.

“Then, we will become the allies of the Conquest Knight we saw yesterday?”

Carlov asked as he moved between Locke and Beatrice. The mercenary king had taken advantage of his magnificent body to disguise as a lycanthrope. The lycanthropes wore armour, so there was almost no difference from what he usually wore.

Carlov flopped down on the ground, while Beatrice sat down on some rocks nearby. Locke shrugged.

“Let’s see? I haven’t confirmed anything except for his strength. Moreover, the Guardian warned against the Conquest Knight.”

Locke had heard the story from Guardian Queian.

Queian didn’t fully believe in Conquest’s betrayal. Even if she had really betrayed the other riders, Queian believed that fighting together was dangerous.

Locke understood Queian’s thoughts. Although he had never encountered them personally, the Four Riders of the Apocalypse were those born for the end of the world. It wasn’t easy to change that innate nature.

Locke remembered Queian’s words and nodded. Then he turned back to Carlov, who was still staring in his direction.

“What is it?”

“No, I just had an absurd thought. The three of us are in alone in the Demon World. I am grateful that the Guardian believes in us, but... I think it is a little too much.”

Additionally, he was embarrassed about the thought of cooperating with the Conquest Knight since they were in an area where they had no one else to ally with. However, Locke just said with a charming smile,

“Carl, aren’t you one of the three people?” (Carl=nickname)

The Mercenary King and Saintess... The three strongest people were together, which gave them a power equivalent to that of an army.

“Um, I agree.”

Carlov was convinced, and this caused Beatrice to laugh. She poked Carlov’s sturdy arm with her finger and asked,

“Carl, are you praising yourself right now?”

“Locke is the one who said it.”

“I am a mighty warrior.”

It was Locke who replied, not Beatrice. Carlov was impressed with Locke’s response, while Beatrice simply giggled and nodded like he was correct.

“Hey, isn’t it amazing?”

“What?”

At Carlov’s blunt question, Beatrice pulled his arm and pointed.

“The Demon World. Isn’t it different from what we thought?”

“That is true. Honestly... I feel like I just travelled to a foreign country. The land is more fertile than I thought. Well, the barren places are seriously barren.”

They had expected sulfur fires and monsters roaming the streets, but the Demon World was surprisingly ordinary. Of course, it was a land where brutal power ruled, but it was much better than they expected. There were good people and bad people. In this sense, it was just like the Human World.

“I was honestly wondering what the Guardian was thinking when he sent you to the Demon World, but... doesn’t it seem like we can cooperate with the people here? And not just the Conquest Knight? I think it will work out pretty well.”

They had encountered many people while travelling through the Demon World. Even though the demon king had taken over, the people seemed just like humans.

“But there might not be a need to fight. Our biggest goal isn’t to fight but to make sure it doesn’t spill over to the Human World.”

Locke calmed down Beatrice’s excitement with his steady voice. Beatrice pouted slightly, while Carlov laughed.

The reason why these three people had come to the Demon World was simple:

Guardian Queian had predicted that a great fight would happen in the north. They had to prevent the flames of war from spreading by keeping the war inside the Demon World.

Queian said it was enough for the Demon World to burn, but Locke disagreed. He also thought about protecting the Demon World, if it was possible.

“For now, let’s keep an eye on the situation from behind. Once we reach the end of the north, I will have to draw my sword even if I don’t want to.”

Locke tapped the Warrior’s Sword at his waist, and Beatrice and Carlov nodded in agreement.

In-gong woke up. Instead of opening his eyes, In-gong turned toward the warmth he felt in his arms. It was a little warmer than usual, but it was probably Green Wind. In-gong stretched out a hand like it was a habit and stroked Green Wind’s head.

“Greenie...”

‘Did you call Master?’

Green Wind immediately responded to his voice. However, the voice was ringing in his ears, not from outside.

In-gong opened his eyes and realized that he was touching dark blue hair, not green. The owner of the hair wriggled slightly in his arms and asked,

“Shutra, are you awake?”

“Caitlin noona?”

The golden eyes obviously belonged to Caitlin. She was still half-asleep as she nodded and buried her nose in In-gong’s chest.

“You smell good.”

He felt a strange sensation when she sniffed his chest. Then a sharp voice saved In-gong from his embarrassment.

“If you are awake, stop now. Haven’t you almost recovered all of your aura as well?”

It was Chris who spoke to both In-gong and Caitlin. The gigantic prince grabbed Caitlin’s neck like she was a cat and lifted her up. Caitlin truly looked like a lycanthrope as she dangled from Chris’ hand.

“Chris hyung.”

In-gong understood instinctively as he called Chris’ name. The Moonlight Core and Starlight Core... Both of them had been placed on the same bed so that their aura could recover, just like before in the lycanthrope territory.

“Besides you, Caitlin also received a shock to her aura... Hum, hum. This scent is great.”

Chris started sniffing, and Caitlin spoke with a large smile,

“Isn’t it?”

The lycanthrope siblings looked at In-gong and smiled. In-gong shrugged and tried to move back.

“Hey, you aren’t going to eat me, are you? Why can I hear the sound of swallowing?”

“Your body seems fine.”

Chris ignored In-gong’s words and sat down on the bed. In-gong backed away a bit more and asked,

“How long was I asleep?”

“Just a day.”

Indeed, In-gong checked the mini-map and saw that it was an hour before noon. He only overslept a little bit from his normal wake-up time.

“The others?”

Caitlin and Chris were the only ones in the room. Chris then replied in a somewhat darker voice,

“The damage was huge. Silvan is still out there, and the 3rd Queen is lying in bed. She is just tired from yesterday, but... I still can’t help but worry.”

Sylvia had used the enormous magic power of the palace to fight the demonic god yesterday. An ordinary magician would have already lost their life.

“Felicia unni is nursing the queen.”

Caitlin continued in a gloomy voice. Normally, Felicia would be the first one In-gong saw when he woke up after collapsing, but it made sense that she would be with Sylvia right now.

“Carack?”

“Resting outside. Amita is also safe, so you don’t have to worry.”

“Sky Forest?”

“As I said earlier, the condition is serious. There are over 1,000 dead or injured. The magic fog has disappeared, and most of the magical facilities, including the palace, are

not operating. The rescue operations are still continuing, and it is still unknown what the cause was.”

Chris’ tone was hard. This meant that the situation was still serious.

“Still, I’m glad. You were able to defeat the demonic god. If it wasn’t for you, the damage would be much more serious. The casualties would be a few times what it is now.”

Chris smiled a bit as he stood up before sitting down again. Then he looked straight at In-gong and touched In-gong’s shoulder lightly with his big fist.

“You are really strong. I honestly don’t believe it. What the hell are you doing to have become so strong in a year? I would have believed that a great captain was in Sky Forest.”

The five captains could be called the mightiest weapons of the demon king. They were just below the demon king and were the peak of strength in the Demon World. However, last night, In-gong had shown a strength comparable to that of the captains.

Chris remembered the day he had seen In-gong during the Red Lightning tribe mission. He had also been there at the moment when In-gong awakened his aura in an absurd manner.

“I finally know why the sword duke is interested in you. Maybe this world wants you to become stronger. Yes, that is probably the case. There is no other way to explain the many incidents.”

He really thought it was true. The elder dragons’ equipment, the dragon heart, the Moonlight Core, and the sword duke’s teachings were all once-in-a-lifetime things.

‘Maybe that is the right answer.’

In-gong laughed as he thought about Protagonist Correction, while Chris shook his head. Suppressing his jealous heart, Chris got up from his seat.

“Anyway, I will be going. There are still a lot of things to do because of this situation. Caitlin, you should watch over Shutra. I think it is better if both of you lie down a little longer.”

Chris stroked Caitlin's head roughly before leaving the room. He was just as reliable as his large size.

In-gong settled his thoughts and stretched his body. At that moment, he felt a breath touch his fingertips.

"Noona?"

It was Caitlin. She placed her face near In-gong's fingertip and took a deep breath.

"Excuse me, Shutra."

"Huh?"

"Can I suck it just once?"

Caitlin pointed at his finger, and In-gong couldn't help nodding.

"So, why is there a bite?"

"Slightly, just slightly."

Chapter 193

To The North #2

“So, why is there a bite?”

“Slightly, just slightly.”

In-gong avoided Carack’s gaze and raised his finger. There was a clean lycanthrope bite on it.

Although In-gong had agreed, his flesh was too hard for Caitlin at first. In-gong already had a durability figure which was over 100 points, so his skin was incomparable to Villager A.

Carack looked at In-gong’s wound with a surprised face and laughed.

“You must have been surprised.

In-gong had been bitten suddenly. However, he just shook his head.

“I think Caitlin noona was even more surprised. She did it unconsciously while struggling.”

Her expression while it happened had been really cute. The way Caitlin bit In-gong accidentally and was even more startled than he was... It reminded him of a puppy from his childhood.

‘It is really the same.’

Caitlin was pretty cute. In-gong continued thinking that word. Then Carack narrowed his eyes and said with a serious voice,

“Prince, don’t you think it is more dangerous if you keep thinking that?”

“I-Is that so?”

The boat might have already sailed. It sounded like a joke, but unconsciously, it didn't really seem like one.

"Sniff, sniff. By the way, Prince's smell seems to have weakened?"

Even though he was pretty close, the smell was thin and delicate. If the person smelling it wasn't within a really close distance or concentrating like Carack was now, it would be hard to know that the scent originated from In-gong. This hadn't been the case a few days ago. Previously, just by going near him, one would smell like a flower garden.

In-gong answered with a smile,

"I'm controlling it."

"That scent... it was the aroma from your body?"

"Yes."

"And now, you're controlling it?"

"That's right."

In-gong himself was surprised. Perhaps this fragrance was the result of the skill 'Heavenly Wine'. Although the gandharva smelt good, In-gong's scent was on a serious level.

'Plus, there is more.'

Thanks to the unidentified skill effect of Pheromones, his scent was able to be buried somewhat in the pheromones. It could be used to excite or calm a person.

'Anyway, I don't have to worry about being eaten now.'

In-gong nodded with satisfaction, but Carack was still looking at him like something was strange.

"Well, that is a good thing. As 6th Princess would say, you are still a prince."

“Yes, so let’s move on.”

In-gong was already very different from ordinary gandharva. He had a ‘Protagonist Correction’, separate from other gandharva.

“Then Prince, do you know why something this big happened?”

Carack’s expression changed as he turned to a new topic. It was a very important story, so In-gong’s expression became serious as well.

“Just before the specter of the fairy king appeared, I saw a blue aura coming from the fairy king’s tomb.”

“Is it like what we saw at Thunderdoom Fortress?”

Their memories of that time were intense because it had been a desperate crisis. In-gong nodded.

“Yes, this might be related to that power.

Carack had accompanied In-gong and encountered the energy of Death. He didn’t know what a Death Knight was, but he knew that the strong energy of Death was blue.

“Hmm, then isn’t there something strange?”

“What?”

“If the power of Death was used specifically to resurrect the fairy king... why now?”

Carack scratched his chin and tilted his head to the side. In-gong couldn’t understand the question.

“What... does that mean?”

“Well, I mean, why? Yesterday, the power of the fog in Sky Forest was normal for Sky Forest. If they wanted to target Sky Forest, wouldn’t it be better when the princes, princesses and 3rd Queen wasn’t present? Or at least wait until the princes and princesses have left. I would have done it like that.”

It was a reasonable opinion. If their purpose was to destroy Sky Forest or to use the specter of the fairy king, then doing it yesterday had been a really poor choice.

“Well, that might not be the only variable involved. It might not be possible to resurrect the fairy king any time they wanted.”

It was the ghost of the first fairy king, so resurrecting him wouldn't be an easy task.

‘Moreover, he is stronger compared to the version of him in Knight Saga.’

In Knight Saga, the first fairy king didn't use the magic fog of Sky Forest. However, yesterday's fairy king could only be described as a demonic god.

‘Master, the talking raccoon has come.’

In-gong heard Green Wind's voice while he was thinking. Green Wind was still exhausted from yesterday, so she wasn't in her semi-solid state.

‘Are you in pain?’

‘I'm okay, Master. I am just saving my strength. I'll be okay soon.’

As he exchanged words with Green Wind, the door opened. Just as Green Wind said, Amita showed up with Daphne and Karma behind them.

“Is your body okay? You aren't hurt anywhere?”

In-gong expressed his concern for Amita. Daphne laughed softly.

“I have heard about Prince's performance. Thank you, Your Highness. You saved everyone.”

Daphne and Karma greeted him politely. In-gong's heart warmed at their words.

“I'm glad that Daphne and Karma are safe. Amita as well.”

He was truly relieved to see that all three of them were safe. Then Amita came up to the bed and said,

“Hum, hum. Prince, there is something I want to talk about.”

“What is it?”

“It is simply a feeling, but it seems like this incident is related to the attacks on the guardians.”

Amita didn't seem to just be talking about the purple energy or blue energy. Carack also felt the difference as he folded his arms.

“Raccoon, the fog isn't a guardian. Oh, maybe the big ghost of the fairy king is the guardian?”

They knew about the events where the guardians of various places had been attacked by the monsters covered with purple energy.

“Well, I don't know about that. Like I said, it is simply a feeling.”

Amita responded as their ears and tail moved. It seemed like they had no confidence either. Then Carack added,

“Raccoon, it seems plausible, but Sky Forest hasn't become a desert. Is there any more specific evidence?”

“No, I told you that it's just my feeling! Why are you taking it so seriously?!”

Amita burst out angrily.

‘Carack is right but...’

In-gong was nervous. He didn't forget that Amita wasn't an ordinary raccoon. Amita had defended the last flame for many years, so he couldn't ignore Amita's senses. Carack folded his arms and was about to say something else.

Then at that moment...

“Your Highness.”

Amita opened the door to reveal a dark elf. It was Felicia's aide, Delia.

“Delia.”

Carack stated in a nice voice. Delia greeted Carack with her eyes, but the expressions on both their faces were unusual.

‘Is Delia the winner of the contest for Carack? Doesn’t Seira seem like she still has a chance?’

As In-gong was thinking this, Delia approached the bed.

“Your Highness, the queen is looking for you.”

“The queen? Has she woken up?”

“Yes, she just woke up. She said she has something to share with Prince. It is possible to visit her now.”

In-gong was half lying on the bed, but his stamina had already recovered. So, he nodded and said,

“I understand, I will go right away. Just wait a moment.”

It was natural that he needed to be prepared to meet the queen. Delia expressed her gratitude and stepped back from the bed. However, instead of putting on clothes like everyone expected, In-gong started pulling things out of his inventory.

“Prince, what are you doing?”

“Gifts.”

In-gong took out the Heavenly Wine previously made for Sylvia as well as the highest quality elixir. He instantly mixed them together. The combination of magic power, divinity, and Dragon Words made it an incomparable mixture.

‘Come to think of it, if I create new blood, will it have a better effect and taste?’

Both Divinity and Heavenly Wine had levelled up. However, it was too cumbersome to make a new Heavenly Wine right now. There were too many eyes. As soon as In-gong

opened the bottle of Heavenly Wind, Amita sniffed and jumped up.

“Heok! Are you mixing that good drink with the elixir?!”

“It is because the queen is precious. She played a really big role in this fight.”

If it hadn't been for Sylvia, then he wouldn't have won against the fairy king. Sylvia had collapsed from depleting her magic power, so he wanted to give her more.

“I-I also tried!”

Amita shouted. Both eyes were fixed on the Heavenly Wine.

“Well, Amita also played an active role.”

“T-that's right.”

Amita's tail waved fiercely at In-gong's words. In-gong patted Amita lightly on the head and said,

“Well done.”

Then he once again focused on the combination. After 10 seconds or so...

Amita angrily pounded the floor with their tail.

After preparing the new Heavenly Wine, In-gong changed clothes with Carack's help. He walked along with Karma and Daphne, who was holding Amita, but it wasn't an exaggeration to say that Delia and Carack were leading the way.

Contrary to expectations, Delia headed to the top floor, instead of Sylvia's room. As soon as Sylvia woke up, she had insisted on going to the throne on the top floor. The evidence of yesterday's horror remained all over the palace. The number of dark elves walking around the palace was also greatly reduced. In front of the office on the top floor, there were guards standing with stiff faces. However, it wasn't just due to fatigue and tension.

‘They are still worried.’

Sylvia was a very beloved queen, so it was likely the guards’ expressions were due to Sylvia.

“The queen is waiting. Go in comfortably.”

A leader of the dark elf guards said to In-gong. The leader knew the whole story regarding yesterday, so he had very favourable feelings toward In-gong. In-gong headed into the office. The structure of the room meant that all eyes went to Sylvia on the throne as soon as they entered.

“Shutra.”

Felicia spoke from next to the throne, but she didn’t run in his direction. In-gong looked at Sylvia next to her. Her complexion was pale, and she seemed to have no strength.

“Your Majesty the Queen.”

In-gong approached the podium and bowed. Every one except Amita followed his example, and Sylvia gave a pained smile.

Then at that moment...

In-gong suddenly looked up at the sky. Just like yesterday, the ceiling was open, and he could see a clear sky without any clouds. The cause of his sudden action was the white woman. She didn’t voice it, but In-gong could see it. The white woman was looking at the sky. She felt something. Everyone was confused by In-gong’s sudden action except for Sylvia. Her smile widened as she said,

“As expected from Shutra. You already noticed.”

“Omamama?”

Felicia asked Sylvia what she meant. Instead of answering, Sylvia chanted a song-like spell.

It was using Sylvia’s magic power, rather than the palace’s. Felicia was nervous about

Sylvia's condition but fortunately, it wasn't a big burden. As Sylvia's recitation continued, sparkling lights started to pour down from the sky. It was like looking at stars in the middle of the day.

The dancing lights descended from the sky and reached Sylvia's thighs. In-gong followed the light and could see what it was. It was a crystal of magic power which had been broken and divided into several pieces.

This was a fairy.

Chapter 194

To The North #3

There were five pieces of light. Felicia stared at the pieces of light sitting on Sylvia's thigh and gulped.

"This..."

"It is the rumoured fairy. It is like the fairy of the first fairy king."

It was Amita who spoke in a heavy tone. They had climbed up the podium and was now staring at the pieces of light. Sylvia smiled faintly.

"Amita truly has a discerning eye. Yes, it is divided into several pieces, but it is a fairy."

It was different from common fairies. Despite losing its shape, this was actually the fairy of the first fairy king. Sylvia slowly moved her hands and touched the pieces of light with her thin fingers. It gave off a warm magic power with no signs of wickedness at all.

"I saw it before losing consciousness and felt it immediately after waking up. Maybe it was the first fairy king who told me."

The first fairy king was glad. The specter had attempted to destroy Sky Forest with the fog which had been prepared to defend it. However, Sylvia didn't think that was the true fairy king. After all, he was someone who had tried to defend the dark elves even after death.

Sylvia had heard the voice of the fairy king at the last minute. It wasn't a mistake nor a hallucination created by a desperate mind. It had been the fairy king's voice. After nearly destroying Sky Forest with his own hands, he sent a message of thanks for stopping him.

"Sky Forest has lost the power of the fog. The source of magic power which enriched Sky Forest is gone. But if there is some contained in this fairy... I think I can regain half

the strength.”

As the magic fog disappeared, the Dark Elves’ Palace also lost all its magic power. The restoration of the palace was necessary for Sky Forest to function properly. Sylvia picked up one of the five pieces. There was one sole piece shining green among all the gold pieces.

“Shutra, this is your share.”

As Sylvia placed the piece in the air, a mysterious thing happened. Although he didn’t use any magic power or Telekinesis, the green piece fell toward In-gong’s palm.

“Can you tell after touching it?”

Sylvia asked, and In-gong nodded. He really felt it the moment he touched the piece.

“Yes, Your Majesty.”

“Shutra?”

Felicia stood next to Sylvia and asked about what Sylvia was saying. Clearly, Felicia had a few questions. In-gong grabbed the green piece lightly and answered,

“This piece of the fairy is tinged with my magic power.”

Every magic had its own colour and attributes. The magic power of the fairy king was gold while this piece was green. Not just the colour but the nature of the magic power was the same as In-gong’s.

“It might be the impact of the last strike or a gift from the fairy king... Only the heavens know the truth, but I think it is the latter.”

According to Sylvia’s belief, it was a gift the fairy king left behind for In-gong.

‘Conquest.’

The white woman whispered from In-gong’s soul. In-gong grabbed the piece of light and used his magic power. Then the piece shone with a bright light and became a solid green gem. Everyone let out a cry of admiration as the mass of magic power

crystallized in front of them. There was a look of delight on Sylvia's face.

"The piece of fairy contains powerful magic... I think it would be nice to add it to the various spells that Shutra has."

Sylvia had gained some insights into In-gong's magic power after last night's fight. Everyone nodded at her words while Amita, who was in front of the throne, jumped down and shouted,

"I-I'll add it! Let me do it! This Amita is a professional!"

Amita ran down the stairs excitedly and stopped in front of In-gong.

"Let me! Yes? I'll do it!"

"U-Understood. I'll leave it to you. Calm down."

At In-gong's reflexive words, Amita sighed while their eyes shone like lanterns.

"Heok, heok. You really will leave it to me?"

'Master, the pig raccoon has become a strange racoon.'

Green Wind whispered in a teasing tone. In-gong agreed as he saw the greed in Amita's eyes.

"Just a glass, right?"

"Sob, sob. How about two glasses?"

Amita's reason for doing this was to get the Heavenly Wine. In-gong struggled for a short moment before nodding. Sometimes a carrot was necessary.

"Okay, two cups."

"Yah! I'll put it on Earth Quaker. Then it will be perfect!"

Amita chanted and their tail waved as In-gong handed over the piece of fairy. Daphne normally took good care of Amita, but she could only sigh this time. However, Sylvia

just laughed at the pleasant sight. She was exactly like Felicia, but as she was also a queen, and her every act was more elegant.

“Well, is it been organized now?”

“I’m sorry, Your Majesty.”

In-gong apologized with an embarrassed face. The way he talked to her had changed because this was the palace of the dark elves.

“Shutra, it is okay to call me Omamama.”

“Yes, Omamama.”

It was uncomfortable with 4th Queen Elaine, but it was easy with Sylvia. Unlike Elaine who was completely different from Caitlin, Sylvia was like Felicia on the inside and outside. Since their talk had been interrupted, In-gong pulled out the Heavenly Wine he had prepared for Sylvia. Amita waved their tail again, but they didn’t rush forward.

“Thank you, I’ll drink it well.”

Now that In-gong had presented the gift to Sylvia, there was only one thing left.

“Omamama, I have something to say.”

Sylvia’s expression changed as In-gong’s voice became low and serious.

“Tell me, Shutra.”

In-gong took a deep breath and talked about his guess regarding the fairy king. He mentioned the various places in the Demon World which had been attacked by those with a purple aura as well as the guardians who had lost their lives. Then he went on to talk about the threats of the Knights of the Apocalypse which had already been reported to the Demon King’s Palace.

After listening to In-gong’s story, Sylvia was upset.

“Indeed. There is also Amita’s feeling. That is quite a story.”

The dark elves suffered huge damage because of this incident, and that wasn't limited to just physical damage. The first fairy king was a spiritual guardian for the dark elves. So, to have such an existence wanting to destroy Sky Forest, it had a tremendous mental impact on the dark elves.

"I will look for the various causes behind this. If I figure out why, then I will tell Shutra."

"Thank you."

As In-gong bowed, Felicia looked at Sylvia's complexion and said,

"Omamama. I think you should go to your room and rest now..."

Her voice was full of worry, and Sylvia nodded slowly.

"Shutra, you should also get a good rest. Felicia, there is no need to follow me. Take a rest for the day. Do you understand?"

"Yes, Omamama."

Felicia replied, and Sylvia left the office with her maids. The group walked out a few minutes later, and someone was waiting for them outside the office.

"Is it finished?"

The person was Caitlin, who was waiting with Seira. Felicia rushed over to them and touched Caitlin's body as she asked,

"Caitlin, are you okay? Are you hurting anywhere?"

"Yes, yes. I'm fine."

Caitlin had fainted in front of Felicia after using aura excessively. So, Felicia's fussing was understandable. Felicia's and Caitlin's sisterly actions improved the mood, while Carack headed toward Caitlin.

"Princess, I heard that you tasted Prince."

Caitlin flinched at the surprise attack. Felicia blinked with confusion when she saw the

visible reaction.

“Tasted Shutra? What are you talking about?”

“Uh... t-that is actually...”

Caitlin hesitated before explaining what had happened with In-gong. In-gong turned red, while Felicia’s eyes narrowed.

“Hmm, I see. Yes, something like that happened. So? What was the taste?”

At Felicia’s question, Caitlin glanced back at In-gong before whispering in Felicia’s ear.

“Uhh, I see. Is that so?”

Felicia sent In-gong a meaningful smile before whispering to Caitlin again. Then Caitlin looked at In-gong again.

‘What are they talking about?’

He wasn’t sure, but it smelled dangerous. In-gong adjusted the skill Divine Scent to try and hide it.

While In-gong’s group was talking with Sylvia, Chris searched for Silvan’s room. Sepira, who was guarding Silvan’s bed, was disconcerted by Chris’ visit, but Silvan was different. He faced Chris with a blank face, unlike his usual self.

Instead of approaching the bed, Chris stopped in the middle of the room. He stared at Silvan, who was lying on the bed due to the overuse of magic power, and then fixed his gaze on the right eye which was covered by an eyepatch.

“The fairy... can you control it?”

It was an unexpected question. Sepira gulped. The fact that Silvan had the fairy was a secret which only a few dark elves knew. Yet the prince of the lycanthrope’s words suggested that he knew about it.

It was Chris who first came to the crashed Black Flame Dragon. Did he see the fairy at that time? No, even if he saw it, how did he know it was the fairy? The fairy was just a superstition among the dark elves. Sepira's expression became complicated as many thoughts passed through her head. However, Silvan just replied in a calm voice,

"Thanks to Shutra."

Silvan didn't say anything else, and Chris didn't ask. He just stared at Silvan for a while and frowned.

"Rest."

Chris said in a low voice before turning and leaving the room. Silvan watched Chris' back with half closed eyes. Rather than explaining to Sepira, he lost himself in old memories.

The change at Sky Forest had been passed onto the Demon King's Palace.

The capital of the dark elves, one of the strong supporters of the Demon King's Palace, had been devastated, so the palace couldn't pass over this news. There were many discussions among the nobles of the palace, and measures were prepared in order to help the dark elves.

Additionally, In-gong's actions became a hot topic. It wasn't just Chris who was reminded of the captains when In-gong defeated the demonic god. There were some who said the story was inflated, while others believed 9th Prince would become the next demon king. The strength of 2nd Prince wasn't easy to beat either.

While the palace was in an uproar due to Sky Forest and In-gong, the dwelling of the demon king, deep inside the castle, was quiet.

The demon king, who had refused the requests of the queens to visit and was resting alone, opened his eyes slowly. There was a visitor in the quiet space which In-gong had visited once.

"Sword Duke."

“I heard about it on the way. 9th Prince really seems to be driving the incidents.”

The sword duke had appeared without any noise. The king shrugged and answered lightly,

“It is a good thing that the child was around when the incident occurred.”

What would have happened if In-gong hadn't been there? It was very lucky. Or maybe it was all due to In-gong's presence.

“Demon King, do you see something in the flow of fate?”

“I can't be sure. Rather, Sword Duke, what is happening?”

The sword duke seemed like he always appeared suddenly, but that actually wasn't the case. He always had a reason for showing up before the demon king. As the guardian of the Sanctuary, it was unthinkable that he was leave it for no reason.

“I've found the specific location of the Arch Lich, Shutenberg. He seems to be hiding in the north.”

It was the north once again. The demon king felt like he was seeing several streams of water become one.

“Are you going to go?”

“It is my role as the protector of the Sanctuary.”

He had to eliminate any threats to the Sanctuary. Originally, it was a naturally mission which he didn't need to report to the demon king. However, the sword duke visited the demon king because he had a request.

“Demon King, can I bring the princes?”

He didn't mention specific names, but the demon king understood. Maybe this would be when Zephyr's and In-gong's fates intersected.

“I will allow it.”

“Thank you. I will come back with good news.”

The sword duke disappeared as suddenly as he had appeared. The demon king turned his weary body and stared at a distant place. However, it wasn't at In-gong and Zephyr in the northern direction. There was one more person possessing a destiny as strong as the previous two. What would result from this intersection of fate?

The demon king recalled the face of 5th Queen Semita Ignus. Then he looked away from the flow of fate for a moment and lost himself in his memories of her.

Chapter 195

Discovery

Among the children of the demon king, the first one to arrive at Aegis Gate was 1st Prince Baikal Ragnaros.

He had a mission in the north, so this was an inevitable result.

There were fewer transportation formations near Aegis Gate than in any other area, but there were several reasons for this. The two most common reasons were:

Firstly, the flow of magic power in the north was much more complicated in comparison to other regions; and secondly, there were few civilians living in the north. Additionally, most of the places there were military facilities.

The entire transportation formation network which enabled long-distance spatial movement was more detailed and complicated than imagined. It was so delicate that the flow of magic power around it was likely to cause problems in terms of stability.

The main users of the transportation formations were the Demon King's Palace and the VIPs of each species. If there were to be an accident during the transition, then an unnatural death would occur. So, it couldn't be operated with low stability.

The second reason was that it was a matter of efficiency. There was a limit to the volume which could be transported at once. In emergency situations, they were activated several times to transfer a large number of troops and materials. However, considering the amount of magic power required to activate the transportation formations, this was unreasonable during peacetime.

When considering just the efficiency, the railway operating in the north was far superior for transportation. Instead of installing low stability transportation formations in the north, the Demon King's Palace relied on land transportation such as railways for the movement of supplies.

Baikal was interested in the many new technologies which could affect the lives of the

people in the Demon World. Therefore, he had chosen to use the railroad, instead of heading directly north.

‘It was well worth it.’

As he recalled the railroad, Baikal sat down at his desk and wrote a letter in a graceful and clear handwriting. It was a letter of reply to Anastasia.

Of course, considering the time it would take for the letter to be sent and Anastasia’s arrival in the north, it would be better to wait a few days and talk in person. However, Anastasia’s letter was fascinating. As he thought about the pleased expression Anastasia would have when she received the letter, he didn’t feel troubled about writing a reply.

‘I think that many things have improved.’

Unlike her usual letters, this one talked frequently about the other children of the demon king. Felicia was Anastasia’s prized sister, so she appeared regularly. However, this time, Shutra’s and Caitlin’s names were mentioned for the first time.

‘Rather, doesn’t Victor appear less this time?’

Before receiving Anastasia’s letter, Baikal had already received a report about what happened in Curtis. Victor and Anastasia had both moved rationally, so there were no complaints about each other’s actions. However, the regrets and upset feelings would still remain. Perhaps it was a reflection of her heart that she wrote so little about Victor in this letter.

“Shutra...”

Baikal deliberately said aloud.

Anastasia wasn’t honest in person, but she was quite frank in her letters. Her tone was more youthful, like a child, and there were occasions where she seemed to be smiling. Thanks to that, Baikal was able to know about it. No matter how hard she tried to pretend in the letter, Anastasia seemed to like Shutra quite a lot.

Baikal put his pen down for a moment as he thought about Shutra.

‘A soulless child.’

Someone had said that once, and it described Shutra accurately. However, Shutra had changed. It wasn’t just his personality, but he was also becoming stronger at a fearsome pace.

‘Disturbance Shutra.’

That was Shutra’s nickname recently. It was because he raised a disturbance everywhere he went.

Moreover, Shutra boasted a great charm. He had been able to sway Chris and Caitlin to his side, and he even gained Felicia and Silvan in the end. Based on this letter from Anastasia, Shutra was also charming her.

A powerful competitor had appeared, but Baikal’s thoughts were different. As he said to Anastasia, the children of the demon king weren’t enemies. They were good competitors. Baikal would be satisfied if a better candidate appeared and made the Demon World into a better place.

‘Of course, I have no intention of giving up.’

Baikal laughed as he suddenly looked out the window. A blizzard was occurring.

“Zephyr isn’t here yet.”

The last time Baikal heard news about him was a fortnight ago. He heard that Zephyr caught the ice dragon, Quanta, but he had no news since. Even though Zephyr was the most powerful prince, he was just a blunt and brusque little brother to Baikal.

“I hope he doesn’t get hurt.”

Baikal mumbled with concern before picking up his pen again. The he thought about Anastasia’s happy face and smiled.

Baikal was indeed Zephyr’s older brother. While he was looking out the window at the blizzard, his worry was being realized at the Northern Limit Line.

‘Wicked wretch!’

A new white dragon burst out angrily. His roar shook the heavens, but those who faced his wrath felt bliss, rather than fear. It was because he was obviously weakened from when he first appeared.

“Just a little more!”

“Push!”

The commanders cried out excitedly, and the soldiers responded with loud shouts, with the 3,000 troops of mixed species shouting at the same time. Their cries pierced through the blizzard and caused an avalanche.

White Dragon Callosa...

He was an evil dragon famous for his nightmare-like avalanches. The White Dragon Callosa had lived twice as long as the ice dragon, Quanta, and reigned over the Shubilli Mountains for thousands of years.

No one had dared to challenge him in the last several hundred years. So, his authority in this area was inviolable, like a god. However, yesterday...

“Bite!”

Zephyr’s soldiers cried out like they were the gods. Callosa was lying on the ground with chains covering him, while Quanta sat on his chest. She had made herself bigger so that she could crush him. As her sharp claws pierced Callosa’s back, Callosa shouted,

‘This bitch! You have forgotten the pride of a dragon!’

Instead of responding, Quanta aimed a cold breath at Callosa’s neck. The cold air permeating his throat gave Callosa terrible pain. Callosa shook violently, but he couldn’t get rid of Quanta. The chains tangled over his body were a problem, but there was an even bigger issue.

There were powerful curses suppressing Callosa. Horrible monsters hung on his body

and interrupted the circulation of his magic power.

“Ohh! Ohhh!”

Commander Sektum cheered. The creatures he had created were showing a better performance than expected.

He had combined the bodies of a drake, ogre, wyvern, and other species to create these masterpieces. It was an ogre with a wyvern’s head, with the strength of a giant and more power than a drake.

Since Thunderdoom’s crazy dwarves were destroyed, those who hunted dragons had disappeared. In some cases, heroes would appear to face a dragon, but it was literally a confrontation. This hunt was different.

Sektum was excited. A hunt was unfolding in front of him right now. It was a hunt for the best species, a dragon!

100 magicians cast spells at once. No matter how strong the Dragon Words were, the magicians raised at the Demon King’s Palace expertly obstructed his magic. Some of the magicians who interfered with Callosa’s magic collapsed due to the backlash of magic power. This meant that Callosa was in an urgent situation.

Callosa and Quanta bit at each other. Zephyr looked on from the back of his nightmare and pulled out his Dragon Slayer sword slowly.

It was time to settle this.

“Altesia!”

Zephyr shouted from aboard a nightmare. His strong cry wasn’t disturbed by the snowstorm and was conveyed to the ears of the waiting Altesia. Altesia responded with a cry full of divine power instead of acting as promised.

“My fiance! I love you more!”

The bright and cheery voice resonated through the battlefield. Half of the soldiers looked in Altesia’s direction while the other half stared at Zephyr anxiously. Sektum looked at Zephyr, but it was as expected. Instead of shouting Altesia’s name again,

Zephyr glared horribly. Although it wasn't aimed toward him, Sektum felt like he couldn't breathe.

Instead of following orders regarding the angry dragon, Altesia shrieked,

"Kyak! Creepy! I am attracted to things like this!"

As expected from Zephyr's self-proclaimed fiancée. She wouldn't be able to declare something like that unless she had nerves of steel.

Fortunately, Altesia now followed Zephyr's orders, instead of provoking him more. She stretched out her hand and aimed all types of curses at Callosa.

Callosa shrieked soundlessly. He had lost his voice due to a curse Altesia had cast on him.

Altesia's curses were devious, yet powerful. After his voice, Callosa lost his sight and smell as well. His power weakened, and some of his body parts aged and didn't function properly. Additionally, his weakened scales were torn off. He would have normally used magic or shaken the attacks off, but that wasn't possible now. Callosa had already become the prey of Quanta.

However, this was Callosa, a nightmare who had reigned over the Shubilli Mountains for thousands of years. Callosa brought the power of his dragon heart to the peak and removed all the hindrances, including the curses. After hitting Quanta with his tail, he was able to get on his feet. Neither could the chains restrain him any longer.

He exhaled into the snowstorm. It was a cold breath which caused nightmares. Frost Breath froze everything in its path. Even the atmosphere seemed to be frozen. Dozens of magicians coughed up blood and collapsed. Additionally, the creatures Sektum created couldn't survive as they were frozen.

However, Altesia was still smiling, and her gaze was concentrated on only one person.

The nightmare's dash exceeded the speed of Frost Breath. The nightmare poured down from above and ran faster, becoming the wind itself. As he moved through the air, Zephyr concentrated all his strength on the sword in his hand.

The sword Dragon Slayer from the dragon slayer series... The will of the strongest

dragon killer was inherent in it! A light flashed. There was a thunderous sound, and an avalanche occurred in the Shubilli Mountains.

White Dragon Callosa collapsed, there was a big hole in his chest.

Then Altesia raised her fist and cheered. Thousands of soldiers shouted at the same time, worsening the avalanche. Quanta transformed into a gandharva to avoid being caught in the avalanche. She watched a fellow member of her species die, but she said nothing.

Zephyr dismounted from the nightmare. He grabbed Dragon Slayer and approached Callosa's open chest.

The heart was what made Callosa exist as a creature, and because he had controlled his aim, it still remained.

This was the biggest reason why Zephyr was hunting the White Dragon Callosa. Zephyr reached out a hand, and he grabbed the heart of White Dragon Callosa.

"So, this is a fairy?"

"Yes."

Chapter 196

Discovery #2

“So, this is a fairy?”

“Yes. One of the pieces, to be precise.”

Habits were strange. The children of the demon king who belonged to Shutra’s faction gathered naturally in In-gong’s living room, and such habits didn’t change even when they arrived at the Dark Elves’ Palace.

In-gong sat on the middle of a large sofa, while Chris examined Earth Quaker and the green jewel attached to it.

“You really receive many things.”

After receiving the Moonlight Core and dragon heart, it was the fairy. In-gong could also now become a gandharva god due to Spiritualism. Additionally, there were the four equipments from the elder dragons. Yet Chris didn’t feel envious. Did he truly not feel jealousy?

‘Indeed, I have been in first place for a long time, yet he hasn’t shown any jealousy.’

Chris had already cleansed his heart when he pushed In-gong as a candidate for the demon king. Therefore, Chris just laughed and seemed curious about the fairy itself.

“Isn’t the fairy a magic power generator that is difficult to control?”

“I don’t know if it is because the fairy is stained with my magic power or because it is stuck in Earth Quaker, but there is no problem with controlling it. The performance isn’t as good since it is just a piece, but it is still a powerful generator of magic power.”

In-gong smiled and gently stroked the fairy embedded in Earth Quaker. The green light of the fairy shook like it was responding to In-gong’s touch.

“If it has to be ranked, Earth Quaker is now the SSS rank, instead of SS rank. It has been through this Amita’s hands several times.”

Amita tapped their chest proudly from their spot on a table, while their tail waved happily. Then In-gong sneaked a peek at Daphne before pulling a small bottle from his inventory.

“Here it is. The Heavenly Wine as promised.”

“Ohh! My treasure!”

Amita accepted the small bottle and rubbed it against their cheek. It was a natural response after staying all up night for a couple of days to finish this work. Although Amita looked cute holding the small bottle, the way everyone was looking at Amita was strange. In particular, Chris’ expression was subtle.

“Shutra, did you give this to the queen?”

Chris was worried about symptoms of addiction. In-gong waved his hands lightly and reassured him.

“It’s okay. Hasn’t Hyung also tried it? Amita is unusual.”

“Well, I’m glad... although I also feel slight regret.”

If everyone was as addicted as Amita, then it would be a fearsome weapon.

‘Indeed, Chris.’

In-gong understood Chris’ thoughts and smiled awkwardly. In fact, if he made the Heavenly Wine using the Pheromones ability, then it would truly become addictive like a drug.

It had been a few days since the fog of magic power had disappeared. The pieces of the fairy had improved things, but the Dark Elves’ Palace and Sky Forest were still suffering from a lack of magic power. The transportation formation linked to the Demon King’s Palace wasn’t working, so they were dependent on support from the nearby dark elf cities.

The good news was that Sylvia was improving quickly. Thanks to In-gong's group taking care of any worries, she was able to rest comfortably for a few days.

After the conversation about the fairy, it naturally shifted toward their future schedule. In the first place, they had only planned to stay in the Dark Elves' Palace for a short while before heading to the north. It was now time to determine their movement path.

Suddenly, In-gong got up from his seat and turned toward the window.

"Sword Duke."

Everyone was puzzled by the sudden call, but it was only for a moment. The balcony doors opened as if in response to In-gong's call and the sword duke appeared.

"How great. Did you get new skills?"

The sword duke said with a laugh. This was because In-gong noticed the sword duke's arrival, unlike last time at his mansion.

"Not enough to brag."

In-gong smiled as he replied. The change was the result of various skills being increased and the gaining of four levels after defeating the first fairy king.

"Well, then..."

The sword duke moved as he spoke casually. Despite the fact that the sword duke took one step, everyone missed it, except for one person.

"Noona doesn't like it."

In-gong stood in front of Felicia as the sword duke suddenly appeared in front of In-gong. He really was like a ghost.

"Hoh."

Instead of taking offense at In-gong's words, the sword duke smiled joyfully. It was a situation where In-gong used Wind Style to catch up with the sword duke.

Felicia realized the situation belatedly and said,

“Huhu, our Shutra has become stronger. Don’t you think?”

“Why is Noonim acting like you are the good one?”

Chris grumbled, but Felicia just laughed. Caitlin muttered in a grouchy voice,

“I like it...”

However, the sword duke stepped back instead of heading toward Caitlin.

“You are really strong. An impressive growth.”

“Huhuhut.”

It was Felicia, not In-gong, who laughed triumphantly again. Instead of questioning Felicia again, Chris turned his attention toward the sword duke. It was unusual for the sword duke to appear here, instead of at the Demon King’s Palace.

However, just as Chris was able to speak... Amita jumped on the table and cried out,

“Sword Duke, what is going on?”

“Am... ita? You have become cuter.”

The sword duke said as he observed Amita who had gotten fatter. Amita blushed like their weakness was being stung and beat the table with their tail.

“Shut up! What the hell is going on?”

Amita knew about the sword duke and the Sanctuary to some extent. For the sword duke to appear at a location far away from the Demon King’s Palace... it probably had something to do with the Sanctuary.

The sword duke frowned and said in a subdued voice,

“There is a place I need to go with Prince.”

“Are you taking Shutra again?”

Felicia interrupted quickly. The sword duke shook his head.

“I don’t need to do that this time. However, it is obvious that I am going to a dangerous place.”

The atmosphere in the room became heavy at the sword duke’s words. While their mouths were stunned shut, the sword duke turned toward In-gong.

“Prince, I found out where the body of Shutenberg is.”

In-gong nodded. He had already guessed that’s what it would be about when the sword duke appeared out of nowhere. Rather, it was Felicia who responded to the name Shutenberg.

“Shutenberg? Surely not the Arch Lich, Shutenberg?”

“That’s right.”

Felicia covered her face and sighed at the sword duke’s confirmation. Chris was suspicious of her reaction and asked straight away,

“Noonim, can you tell me a bit more?”

“Shutenberg is a figure from the Era of Struggle. He was the king of a small kingdom, a monster who sacrificed the lives of his people to gain power. Do you know about the Half King?”

“The Half King!”

Chris exclaimed with surprise. Among the evils in the Era of Struggle, there was one notorious creature. He hadn’t appeared throughout history for 1,000 years and was known to have already died. If the opponent was the Half King Shutenberg, then Chris could understand why the sword duke was going directly.

“Then was the disappearance last time also related to Shutenberg?”

“Yes.”

The sword duke answered Felicia’s question before looking around at everyone in the room.

“I am going to get rid of him. I’ve already received permission from the demon king for 9th Prince to accompany me. Do the other princes and princesses want to go along?”

This time he wasn’t going to the Sanctuary, so there was no need to disqualify the other royal children.

Silvan eagerly expressed his intention to participate, but Chris hesitated. However, after Felicia and Caitlin agreed, Chris also stated his intention to join. He felt like he needed to go along to protect Caitlin, rather than In-gong.

“Sword Duke, are we the only ones coming along?”

Half King Shutenberg was known for being a powerful magician. If he was alive, then he would likely have mighty forces. Even if the sword duke was with them, she had no choice but to feel uneasy.

At Felicia’s worried question, the sword duke turned to In-gong and said,

“2nd Prince will join.”

The Demon World was too wide. There were many uncharted lands within the territory of the Demon King’s Palace.

If he had to discuss the northern part of the Demon World, it could be defined as a large diamond.

Aegis Gate and the area around it, located in the north direction of the diamond, was the most dangerous area in the Demon World, and virtually nothing outside of military facilities existed there.

The further south from Aegis Gate, the lower the risk would be. The Northern Limit Line was the same everywhere in the north, but the enemies who crossed over were

different.

The centaurs and Enger Plains belonged to the southern part of the diamond. In the diamond form, if a line descended straight from the vertex of the northernmost point, then it would touch a place in the lower corner.

Sky Forest, located to the north of the Demon King's Palace, was also located in the northern part of the diamond.

The sword duke said that the location of Shutenberg's body was located at a point to the southwest of Sky Forest, beyond the limit line. The story would change depending on the route, but it was possible to go through Enger Plains.

After a rough talk, the sword duke went to meet Sylvia, while each of the demon king's children returned to their own rooms to pack.

Once he was left alone, In-gong sat on the couch and looked at the mini-map.

'I will fight with Zephyr.'

Zephyr, the protagonist of the Demon World in Knight Saga and the worst demon who killed all his siblings and the demon king in order to reach the throne of the demon king...

Not just Caitlin and Felicia, but Anastasia was also quite different from Knight Saga. What about Zephyr? Was the Zephyr of this world a cold-blooded murderer like the one in Knight Saga?

In-gong had only met him a few times. Despite this, they hadn't even had a proper conversation.

In-gong closed his eyes slowly and remembered what he had thought when he first opened his eyes in this world.

His challenge was to avoid the Day of Massacre. He would become stronger in order to live. However, that idea had changed. He wanted to protect Caitlin and Felicia. But it wasn't just them. He wanted to protect Chris, Silvan, and everyone else he had become attached to.

The sword duke had said that...

Shutenberg was the biggest enemy threatening the Sanctuary. If he was removed, then the sword duke didn't need to worry about the Sanctuary for the moment. Meanwhile, the children of the demon king and the captains were also gathering in the north.

The demon king was starting a campaign beyond the Northern Limit Line. Additionally, Cruel Talia's lair was somewhere in the north. The eastern barbarians said that the War Knight was heading north. So, it was highly likely that the Death Knight was also located in the north.

Conquest... The purpose of the white woman and the elder dragons was to overthrow the War Knight and Death Knight.

All these variables were being concentrated in the north. Shutenberg, the Sanctuary, the War Knight, and the Death Knight...

In the past, the Death Knight had aimed at Zephyr. Why had he pursued Zephyr? What method was the Death Knight and War Knight using to bring about the end of the world?

In-gong remembered the first fairy king, and Torres' words from the Dragon Temple entered his head. Yet that was only a piece of the whole. However, in the near future, all the pieces would fit together.

"Prince, what are you thinking about so intently?"

"Carack."

In-gong opened his eyes and looked at Carack, who looked at In-gong with worried eyes as he sat beside him.

"Were you falling asleep?"

"Yes."

"Your spirit isn't looking good. Drink some cold water."

Carack handed him a bucket he pulled from somewhere. It was filled with cold water.

“And the reason for this...”

Carack hesitated again before smiling and knocking against In-gong’s shoulder.

“Don’t worry. Prince will be able to get the job done as always.”

There was no basis other than faith for this. In-gong put down the bucket after drinking the water and looked at Carack, causing him to jump up quickly.

“I don’t know why you are making that disgusting expression, but I came to wake you up, so I am going.

Then he really tried to leave. In-gong laughed and called out to Carack’s back.

“Carack! You know that I love you, right?”

“Prince, I’m sorry, but I like women. I respectfully decline.”

Carack waved his hand and left hurriedly. Then a new voice entered his ears like it had been waiting.

‘Master, I like Master. I am also a woman.’

Green Wind became solid and spoke to In-gong. In-gong stroked Green Wind’s head and gave her a cheery smile.

Then the next morning...

With everyone on board, the Black Flame Dragon left Sky Forest and headed north.

Chapter 197

Discovery #3

It was impossible to have a crowded banquet now that Sky Forest and the palace had suffered due to the fairy king. However, it was also impossible to let the party that saved Sky Forest leave without anything.

So, after Sylvia finished her conversation with the sword duke, she set up a small party. It was to compensate for the situation with Sky Forest and show that Sylvia was fine after collapsing. Due to it being a small banquet, the participants were simple: the children of the demon king; their aides; and the queen.

The dark elves emphasized an atmosphere which was just as free as their clothing, so the formalities of the banquet were virtually nonexistent. Since it was such a small banquet, they were able to lie down while eating and drinking. After a few drinks, the atmosphere naturally turned boisterous. The loudest ones were those gathered in the middle of the banquet hall.

“Higher! Higher! Higher!”

It wasn't the sword duke throwing Felicia toward the ceiling. It was a drunk In-gong. The person who did it was different, so the response of the recipient was different. Felicia, like In-gong, had red cheeks from the alcohol as she burst into laughter.

“Kyaaah~”

She screamed, but it was a very pleased one. Caitlin, who was following Felicia's movements between the ceiling and Shutra's hands, tugged at In-gong's clothes.

“Me too! Me as well, Shutra!”

Caitlin was also drunk. Her pale cheeks were red, and her golden eyes were out of focus.

Under normal circumstances, he would stop throwing Felicia or have Caitlin wait a

while, but both In-gong and Caitlin were drunk. In-gong turned to Caitlin and nodded. He stretched out his hand and threw Caitlin toward the ceiling.

Felicia and Caitlin alternated between the ceiling and In-gong's hands. It looked like he was juggling them. Felicia and Caitlin screamed with pleasure. Most of those watching had smiles on their faces, except for a few people.

"Somehow, don't they react differently from when I do it?"

The sword duke complained while drinking. Chris, who was sitting next to him, shrugged and replied,

"Sword Duke, it is the same for anyone else, so you don't have to worry."

"Felicia! Let Oppa do it!"

"Ah, come on!"

The sword duke watched Silvan try to grab Felicia, and he nodded with a convinced expression.

"Yes, indeed."

The sword duke nodded a few more times before turning his attention elsewhere. Caitlin's and Felicia's aides, who should be watching them, were talking to someone else. It was In-gong's aide, Carack.

The sword duke found the sight of an orc being surrounded by a beautiful dark elf, a lycanthrope, and a satyr ridiculous. Then he turned his gaze elsewhere once again. Sylvia, queen of the dark elves and 3rd queen of the Demon King's Palace, was lying down sideways.

Sylvia was lying down on a stack of cloth and smoking a cigarette, while Amita was fidgeting in front of her. It seemed like they were doing business.

Looking at the two people carefully, the sword duke asked Chris again,

"Prince, do you know why Amita is like that?"

“They have a weak character that fell to temptation.”

“Indeed.”

The sword duke nodded and focused on the conversation between Sylvia and Amita. The two people’s voices could be heard clearly in the noisy surroundings.

“I understand! I’ll make it! So, will you give me half?”

Amita waved their hands, while Sylvia cocked her head and pretended not to know.

“Hrmmm, well. Can I ask you to make me a few sacks?”

“Three sacks! Three sacks of weapons if you give me half a bottle!”

“Omo, didn’t I say it was five sacks?”

Sylvia blinked as she raised a hand to her cheek, looking truly bewitching yet innocent. Amita was silent for a moment, but they soon accepted as their tail banged against the ground.

“Eeeh...! I understand! Five sacks! No more beyond that!”

“Okay. It’s a deal.”

Thanks to Silvan and Felicia, Sylvia was well aware of Amita’s value. Gaining five sacks of Amita’s equipment for half a bottle of wine was a good deal.

“Hmm, I am curious. What flavour does this have that Amita is so enthusiastic?”

Sylvia put out the cigarette in her hand and opened the lid of the bottle containing the Heavenly Wine. As the lid opened, a fragrant smell emerged and those nearby turned to Sylvia without knowing. Sylvia was shocked and took a sip like she was spellbound. Her world changed with one sip.

“Ahh... ah...”

In-gong had created this by mixing an elixir and the Heavenly Wine. Sylvia closed her eyes and moaned, then she sighed and moaned again. She barely regained her mind

after a few sips and said,

“Amita, I take back that contract.”

“Such a thing! This is a violation of the contract! A violation of the contract!”

Amita gulped as Sylvia took another sip, but Sylvia didn’t care. She got up from her seat and approached In-gong.

“Shutra, can you give me just one more bottle?”

In-gong flinched at her coy voice. She looked exactly like Felicia as she embraced him, so In-gong couldn’t resist. Moreover, it was Sylvia who was asking. She had given him the fairy, so he should give her another bottle.

“I-I will.”

“Me too! Me too!”

Amita ran over and made a fuss after seeing him give a bottle to Sylvia so easily. The sword duke watched this scene and shook his head.

“The delicious prince is really great.”

Although the sword duke had never tasted the Heavenly Wind made by In-gong, he knew about it. Then Chris asked him quietly,

“Sword Duke, are all gandharva like this?”

“As far as I know, only Prince is like this among the gandharva. The scents of the other gandharva aren’t to this extent.”

The sword duke recalled 5th Queen Semita Ignus. She always had a good scent around her.

Chris looked briefly at the sword duke before turning his gaze back to the front again. Then he asked casually,

“Are the gandharva healthy?”

In-gong was the only gandharva Chris had met. There were rumours that those inside the confined area had died. The sword duke didn't look at Chris. He just filled up a new glass.

"They are alive and well. At least when I visited them a year ago."

Chris' eyes narrowed.

"Sword Duke, is there any possibility that the gandharvas can be released?"

"It is up to the demon king. Just... it might be harder now."

In-gong had gained divinity, proving that the gandharvas' experiment was a success.

"Sword Duke?"

"I am saying too much. We'll just have to see what happens."

The sword duke set down his glass, stood up and took a step forward. He walked slowly, but it was like he was merging with the wind without even thinking about it.

Chris stared at the spot where the sword duke had been, then he turned his gaze to In-gong.

"Shutra is amazing! Shutra is delicious! Hehehe."

The drunk Caitlin said while hiccuping. She looked very cute, but In-gong's expression was different as he walked next to Chris who was carrying Caitlin on his back.

"Be careful not to get eaten in your sleep."

"I'm glad that Caitlin noona can't transform."

In-gong nodded at the sincere advice. If Caitlin could turn into a wolf like Seira or Elaine, then he would've already been eaten when she bit his finger.

“Ang, ang.”

Caitlin smiled as she heard them talking and pretending to bite the air.

“Well, I really hope you don’t get eaten.

“Yes.”

It seemed like the two of them were speaking to reassure themselves. Chris arrived in front of Caitlin’s room and opened the door. It couldn’t be helped because Seira had been missing since the banquet. At any other time, Chris would’ve scolded Seira, but today was a special day. From the outset, they had been given permission to drink as much as they wanted.

Instead of entered the room, Chris held the doorknob for a while. He looked at In-gong and said,

“Shutra.”

“Huh?”

In-gong turned to Chris. However, Chris didn’t say anything. Instead, he licked his lips a few times before shaking his head.

“Nothing. Good night.”

“Hyung?”

“Go.”

Chris smiled and stroked In-gong’s head roughly before entering the room. Although In-gong had grown a lot this year, this was possible because he was still shorter than Chris. Was Chris trying to say something? Instead of thinking deeply, In-gong returned to his room. If there was something he needed to know, Chris would tell him eventually.

Apart from Seira, Carack was also missing. He could’ve called a dark elf maid, but In-gong entered his room alone.

It was a strange feeling. Although he was nervous about joining Zephyr, at present, he was relaxed without any worries. This was why people drank alcohol.

‘Let’s take a look at my stats.’

In-gong opened his status window and looked at the details. All his stats were over 100 points.

‘There are a lot.’

His main occupation was Protagonist, but he also had the Dragon Warrior and Conquest Knight as secondary occupations. Thanks to Spiritualism, other specifics had been added. There were many special racial skills.

‘Well, I need to maintain aura, magic power, and divine power.’

Thanks to receiving the divinity of the gandharva, his divine power had reached a certain level. There was only one power left.

‘There is nothing else to do.’

In-gong leisurely started searching through the status windows of his knights and activated several windows to see their various stats.

‘I haven’t paid much attention to this.’

He often saw Carack and Green Wind’s status windows since they fought together quite often, but he had never really looked at Caitlin’s or Silvan’s after they joined the first time.

‘Well, they all have significant stats.’

This was as expected from the children of the demon king. It might be due to In-gong’s influence, but all of them had higher stats compared to their versions in Knight Saga.

‘It is just like how Zephyr is several times stronger compared to the Zephyr in Knight Saga.’

Indeed, In-gong would be able to see how strong he was during the next mission.

“And... huh?”

In-gong’s eyes suddenly widened as he searched the status windows. It was because his eyes went to a part he hadn’t paid much attention to until now.

[Name: Caitlin]
[Species: Lycanthrope/Sura Mix]

This was an obvious notation. It wasn’t strange. However, In-gong felt uncomfortable.

[Name: Silvan]
[Species: Dark Elf/Sura Mix]

He looked through his memories. It was only recently that the details such as age or species were listed in the status windows of the knights. He hadn’t seen these details when he went to rescue Anastasia.

‘No, no.’

The cause of his discomfort was elsewhere. It wasn’t because of new details.

[Name: Felicia]
[Species: Dark Elf/Sura Mix]

[Name: Carack]
[Species: Orc]

[Name: Karma]
[Species: Satyr]

In-gong activated his status window hurriedly.

[Name: Shutra Ignus]

[Species: Divine Humanoid Gandharva]

In-gong blinked. He took a deep breath and thought about it.

This wasn't because he was reborn as a divine humanoid. Previously, In-gong had 'gandharva' stated in that spot as his species.

He wondered why he wasn't a mix like the others. Why wasn't 'sura' written there like the other children of the demon king? Caitlin, who wasn't a child of the demon king, was also marked as mixed. In other words, a first generation mixed blood was indicated.

Then something popped into his head. In-gong stood up at the thought. It explained why his status window only stated one species.

'A sin big enough to confine all the gandharva.'

Shutra wasn't the child of the demon king. He didn't have the blood of the demon king. It was baffling. This was an unexpected secret of his birth. However, if it was true, Shutra truly wasn't a child of the demon king.

Did the demon king know this?

'He knows.'

He remembered when he met the demon king. The demon king had called In-gong the child of 5th Queen Semita. He had never once called In-gong his own child. Moreover, if the sin of the gandharva really involved Shutra's birth, then their punishment meant the demon king knew the truth. However, he didn't know why the demon king accepted Shutra's presence. Moreover, why had he given In-gong the Seed of Extreme Nothingness?

"Shutra? Are you there?"

He heard a voice outside the door.

It was Felicia's voice.

Chapter 198

Discovery #4

In-gong flinched. Why did he have to hear Felicia's voice at this moment?

"Shutra?"

Her voice was heard again outside the door. He thought about pretending not to be there but stood up anyway because he heard Felicia rustling to open the door.

"Noona? What's going on?"

In-gong approached the door hurriedly. As expected, Felicia was outside the door. Felicia's soft chocolate skin was tinged with red, and she was just wearing a large shawl over a nightgown. She was confused about the door bursting open, but that only lasted a moment. Felicia leaned against the door slightly and asked with narrowed eyes,

"Shutra, what is the matter with you? You seem a little different from normal."

As expected, Felicia noticed quickly. In-gong tried to conceal his expression and waved both hands.

"Nothing's wrong."

"Hrmm."

Felicia's eyes were still narrowed, but she nodded. Fortunately, she passed it off as just a little bit of discomfort. Felicia looked over In-gong's room.

"I haven't seen Delia since before. Is Carack also missing?"

"Huh? Delia as well?"

"Yep, Delia as well."

Felicia replied in a soft voice. She seemed to be envisioning a tryst between Carack and Delia.

‘Wait a minute, wasn’t Carack missing with Seira?’

If Delia was missing, then where was Seira?

‘No way, are they fighting?’

In-gong had the absurd thought of Delia and Seira growling over Carack.

‘Then shouldn’t I look for Karma as well?’

Daphne was with Amita right?

“Hrmm... Carack.”

Felicia, who didn’t know about the disappearance of Seira, laughed at her imagination. She acted just like a girl in her late teens.

‘Cute.’

In-gong blinked at the sight. Thanks to Felicia’s entry, he had forgotten to worry about Shutra’s birth secret. Shutra wasn’t the child of the demon king. Although the demon king had admitted Shutra was his child, Shutra didn’t have a single drop of his blood. This meant that In-gong didn’t share a drop of blood with Felicia.

‘No, I was thinking about that anyway...’

She shared blood with Shutra but not In-gong himself. The Felicia of Knight Saga was a stranger to him. However, it felt different. Whether it was because In-gong was already Shutra or because of an unconscious thought, but at that moment, something changed. He had no choice but to think so.

“Shutra?”

Felicia’s call restored In-gong’s senses. Felicia stared at In-gong, who was slightly shorter than she, and stepped closer.

“Aren’t you a little strange today?”

“Yes, I am drunk. Isn’t Noona really drunk?”

In-gong stepped back reflexively, and Felicia laughed.

“Yet you seem fine?”

She took a step forward just as In-gong took a step back, maintaining the same distance.

“Hrmm?”

Felicia’s eyes once again narrowed as she closed the distance. In-gong took a few steps back before eventually giving up and allowing Felicia to approach.

“Good night, Felicia noona.”

He patted Felicia’s head awkwardly, causing her eyes to widen. Then she smiled.

“Yes, good night, Shutra. Sleep well.”

Felicia was definitely drunk. He could smell the alcohol on her breath as she turned around. As he watched Felicia leave his room, In-gong sighed before catching up to her. He went ahead and opened the door, causing Felicia to ask,

“What is it?”

“I’ll walk with you. There is a long way for you to go.”

Felicia’s room was on an entirely different floor. Felicia blinked at In-gong’s words before bursting out laughing. She grabbed In-gong’s arms and squeezed it gently.

“Then please take care of me, Sir Knight.”

There was a pleasant feeling of pressure, and she felt surprisingly soft and warm.

In-gong coughed and started taking slow steps. For some reason, Felicia chose to walk

quietly instead of talking, so In-gong could think seriously.

‘I wonder why the demon king recognized Shutra as his child. Isn’t he simple a child born out of an affair? And... does he know about Caitlin?’

In Knight Saga, the demon king had been gravely ill when the lycanthrope subjugation took place and couldn’t participate in any political matters. Therefore, the slaughter of the lycanthropes could be called the decision of the nobles and the children of the demon king, rather than the demon king’s decision.

‘Should I just ask the sword duke?’

In fact, it was highly probable that the sword duke knew the secret of his birth. The sword duke’s blunt nature wasn’t a bad thing.

‘Right now, there are no big changes.’

The demon king already knew. Despite that, he had acknowledged In-gong as his child and planted the Seed of Extreme Nothingness.

‘The demon king is the one who protects the Demon World, and the strongest person will become the demon king.’

That had been said by the demon king, not someone else. The demon king didn’t oppose In-gong becoming the demon king. This was a story from Knight Saga, but the demon king recognized Zephyr even as Zephyr killed him.

‘The problem isn’t the demon king.’

It was similar to Caitlin’s situation. If the scandal of In-gong’s birth broke out after the demon king had succumbed to his illness, then an incident similar to the Day of Massacre might occur.

‘Slaughtering the gandharva is no different from slaughtering the lycanthropes.’

Moreover, if such a situation really occurred, what would the children of the demon king do? Would they all become In-gong’s enemies, just like the lycanthrope subjugation in Knight Saga?

‘That won’t be.’

In-gong couldn’t believe it. He didn’t think that even the likely Chris would turn into an enemy. Additionally, Felicia, Silvan and Caitlin already belonged to the King’s Knights.

Sylvia wouldn’t be able to throw away Silvan and Felicia, not to mention Elaine.

‘But a civil war won’t be good. I need to secure the support of the sword duke.’

Even after the demon king had fallen, In-gong could overturn the situation if he had the support of the sword duke. In-gong needed to look for an opportunity to have a conversation with him.

“What are you thinking about so intently?”

Felicia asked suddenly. Her red eyes were more cloudy than usual due to the alcohol, but they were full of care.

‘Never an enemy.’

She wouldn’t become his enemy. He couldn’t imagine such a future.

“I think that Noona is very pretty.”

“Are you trying to be like Silvan?”

Felicia laughed as though she liked the praise. Normally, she would’ve spread open her fan, but Felicia seemed to have become more honest due to the alcohol.

‘By the way...’

While he was joking around, they arrived at the corridor where Felicia’s room was located. A dark elf maid was coming toward them.

“Well, we’re here. Good night, Shutra.”

“Yes, good night.”

In-gong nodded and stroked Felicia's head once before leaving. However, she felt sorry to leave like this and looked at him several times while walking to her room with the maid. In the end, In-gong waved and sighed as Felicia entered her room.

"I am a complete stranger."

Although the blood connection had been severed, he felt oddly happy when he pushed away the complicated problems. As In-gong turned around, Green Wind's voice was heard as if she had been waiting.

'Master.'

"What is it?"

"I am also a stranger to Master."

Green Wind became solid and hugged In-gong's neck. As always, it was a pleasant touch, but In-gong pushed Green Wind away playfully.

"Yes, you are a stranger. So, I should put a distance between us. Don't stick to me."

Green Wind blinked with confusion at his cold words. She sweated for a little bit before hugging In-gong again.

"When I think about it again, that isn't the case. That's right. Absolutely not."

"Didn't you say that I am just your temporary master?"

It was something he had heard the first time he met Green Wind, and she just hugged In-gong tighter. Then she said,

"You are permanent. Permanent. You aren't temporary at all."

In-gong didn't reply and continued patting Green Wind on the head.

The morning sun shone. In-gong opened his eyes and asked in a sullen voice,

“Where were you last night?”

“For men, sometimes, there are secrets that need to be kept even with a knife to his neck.”

Carack declared with a man’s smile. It was foolish since In-gong had already suspected it.

“Stop looking so silly.”

Despite the harsh words, Carack didn’t stop smiling. He laughed as he looked down at In-gong and asked,

“Prince, did you sleep well last night?”

“I slept well. It was a very good sleep.”

“I’m glad you slept well. Now, here is the cold water.”

Carack handed him cold water. In-gong sipped the cup and glanced at Carack, wondering what he had done last night.

“Carack, did you sleep even a little bit?”

“Prince, a man should have great stamina.”

He once again gave a man’s smile. In-gong was afraid to ask who he was with last night.

“Anyway, let’s eat.”

The children of the demon king gathered together at lunch time. In-gong had a monster-like stamina, so he acted like nothing had happened. However, everyone else was different. They were all suffering from extreme hangovers. After finishing a brief lunch, the party headed toward the landing area where the Black Flame Dragon was.

At the landing area, 20 dark elves and Alita, Felicia’s aunt and the leader, were waiting.

‘Master, the orc’s eyes are shining.’

In-gong didn't want to know who Carack was looking at. Therefore, In-gong stared up at the sky.

Then after a few minutes, Sylvia, queen of the dark elves, and the sword duke entered the landing area.

"Shutra, please stay safe."

Sylvia said sweetly as she embraced In-gong. She was also hugging Felicia and Silvan, so he replied instead of pushing her away in embarrassment.

"Yes, Omamama."

Sylvia laughed like she preferred the title of Omamama over Queen. Then she approached Chris who was standing stiffly.

"Chris, please look after yourself as well."

"Yes, Your Majesty."

Chris responded stiffly, but Sylvia hugged him as well. It was a funny sight to see the huge Chris stand still and not face Sylvia.

'He is nervous.'

Rather than dislike, the look on his face was closer to embarrassment. Chris seemed a bit shy. In-gong then turned toward Caitlin, who was waiting for her turn. She smiled warmly when Sylvia hugged her.

"Then, we will be going."

Finally, Silvan boarded the Black Flame Dragon and gave Sylvia a salute, with Sylvia returning the same salute.

The Black Flame Dragon rode the wind.

The Black Flame Dragon flew quickly at a high altitude. Beatrice looked at Locke from

a corner of Sky Forest as he looked up at the flying ship.

“What do you want to do? Follow?”

“I guess we have to follow.”

The direction was somewhat different, but it was clear that they were heading north. Even if they didn't join up with the Demon World's Drakon Kechatulla, it was necessary to overlap the paths.

“Then let's hurry. It will be sad if we miss them.”

Carlov said as he got on a draco. The Black Flame Dragon was really fast, so they could easily miss it with the draco's speed. Beatrice got on her draco after Carlov. Lastly, Locke boarded his draco and looked toward the south.

‘I will be back.’

Locke greeted Guardian Queian in his heart before turning around. He rushed forward along with Carlov and Beatrice.

Zephyr, who was in the barracks, folded a letter containing the signature of the sword duke. Sektum didn't ask about the contents of the letter, and the normally talkative Altesia was also calmer than usual. She just quietly asked which direction they were heading in.

“To the west.”

Zephyr answered briefly before preparing his soldiers to move. Based on the sword duke's letter, a large army would be needed.

‘Arch Lich Shutenberg.’

Zephyr grabbed the magic stone refined from the heart of White Dragon Callosa and looked toward the north instead of the west. His gaze was directed toward the Northern Limit Line far beyond the Aegis Gate where Baikal was.

Three different groups headed to the same place.

The War Knight and Death Knight finally felt like the time was coming. While the Death Knight stayed on his throne...

The War Knight hastened to get there before the three groups.

The Half King, Shutenberg...

The flow of fate, which had split into several streams, started to gather together.



PDF by: traitor#ZEN